

# PROCEEDINGS OF THE ROCKBRIDGE HISTORICAL SOCIETY

VOLUME 5-1954-1960

PUBLISHED BY THE SOCIETY—JULY, 1961 AT LEXINGTON, VA.

## TABLE OF CONTENTS

In Memoriam2-3	lems," Dr. Robert F. Hunter
Foreword 4	April 28, 195860
January 31, 1955 5	Program of music
Address: Mr. Jay W. Johns	July 25, 195860
April 25, 19556	Address: "Zachariah Johnston of
Address: "The Saponi Indians," Capt. John H. Reeves	Augusta and Rockbridge and his Times," Mr. Matthew W. Paxton
July 25, 1955 7	October 27, 1958
Address: "Some People and	ton, Dr. William Bean
Events in the Early History of Timber Ridge Community," Dr. D. Lyle Kinnear	January 12, 195970 Executive Committee Meeting
October 31, 1955 14	January 27, 1959 70
Address: "The Magnificent Valley," Dr. Marshall W. Fishwick	Address: "Greater Lexington— 1890," Mr. Stuart Moore
January 30, 1956	April 25, 1959 79
Address: "The Franklin Society, 1800-1891," Dr. Charles Turner	Address on The Honorable William Anderson, Miss Lois Moore
April 30, 1956	July, 1959 88 Address: "Dr. Archibald Alex-
July 23, 1956 26	ander, Preacher, Teacher, and
Address: "The Saga of an Old Field School," Dr. George W.	Person," Dr. Goodridge Wilson.
Diehl	October 27, 1959 89
October 22, 1956 32	Address: "Lee's Unwritten His-
Address: "The Rockbridge Back-	tory of the Army of Northern Virginia," Dr. Allen Moger
ground of Dr. Andrew Taylor	January 26, 1960 89
Still, founder of Osteopathy,"	Address on Dr. Milton Wiley
Dr. Harry Semones	Humphries, Dr. Ollinger Cren-
January 28, 1957	shaw
ner, Virginia's Pioneer Educa-	April 25, 1960 90
tor," Mr. Harrington Waddell	Address: "The Castle," Miss Mary Galt
April 30, 1957	July 26, 1960 95
dred Fiftieth Anniversary Tour," Mrs. H. Russell Robey	Address on Dr. Ephriam Mc- dowell, Mrs. Gordon Heiner
July 29, 1957	October 31, 1960 96
Address: "Did Alexander Bell	Address: "A Twentieth Century
come to Rockbridge County?" Mrs. Jean S. Augustine	Highway Story," Gen. James Anderson
October 28, 195745	Membership 102
Address: "Records of Rockbridge	Necrology 105
in Richmond," Dr. W. Edwin	Financial Reports 106
Hemphill	Accomplishments 110
January 23, 1958 52	Donations 110
January 23, 1958 52 Address: "Transportation Prob-	By-Laws 111

## TABLE OF CONTENTS

## Dr. W. Cole Davis

(1882-1958)

#### by DR. MARSHALL FISHWICK

No one was ever prouder of his Rockbridge County roots. Though the streams of life took him far from his native soil, and the hand of death reached out for him in distant Venezuela, William Cole Davis will be remembered—as he would have wanted to be—as one of us.

When he was born in Rockbridge Baths on October 7, 1882, his family was already distinguished and important. His grandfather, William Weaver Davis, had come south from Pennsylvania to wrench the iron ore from rock-ribbed Rockbridge. His father, James Cole Davis, was a judge; and his mother, Lucy Burton Davis lived for more than a hundred years in and out of the Valley. Having attended the Ann Smith Academy and Washington & Lee University, young Cole went on to receive his medical degree from the University of Maryland in 1908. World War I found him in the service of his country; it was while he was stationed in the Philippines that he met Miss Madeleine Christie of Winnipeg, Canada. They were married in 1916, and for four ensuing years, Dr. Davis was a member of the Medical Staff at West Point.

Leaving the army in 1920 as a Lieutenant-Colonel, Dr. Davis became medical director at Byberry Hospital, near Philadelphia. He also served as assistant superintendent of the Norristown State Hospital in Pennsylvania. In 1928 he entered private practice as a neuro-psychiatrist in Atlantic City, N.J., where he remained until World War II. By then, he could resist the tug of the past no longer. He came home, and after 1943 distinguished himself as a leader and policy-maker of the Rockbridge Historical Society. To him the past was a living thing, and he was able to communicate his feeling to others. In both the short-range decisions and long range plans, his was a powerful and respected voice.

He knew that if charity should begin at home, it had to be spread abroad. In his mid-seventies, he nevertheless decided to go to the interior of Venezuela to take medical help and supplies to missionaries ministering to the Indians. He died in Caracas on February 23, 1958. His life spanned three quarters of a century, and thousands of miles. But much that was dear to him was encompassed by the lines of the County which gave him life and inspiration for all his years.

### Foreword

It seems particularly appropriate that the fifth volume of the Proceedings of the Rockbridge Historical Society should be published in 1961, a year that marks not only the twenty-second anniversary of the founding of this society, but also the Centennial of the American Civil War, a conflict of special significance to this county.

During the past two decades the Rockbridge Historical Society has come to play a vital role in the life of this community and has done much to acquaint people with the rich and proud heritage of Rockbridge County. The Society has kept in plain view the purposes for which it was founded: "The collection, preservation and dissemination of all things relating to the history, antiquities, landmarks, and literature of the County of Rockbridge and the Town of Lexington, Va.; and promoting general interest in these purposes." These goals have been pursued through the encouragement of the library, the publication of articles in the local papers, the presentation of speakers at regular meetings, and the dedication of markers.

The Rockbridge Historical Society in its efforts to promote a love and understanding of local history is peculiarly fortunate in two respects. First, the number of distinguished Americans who have had associations with this county is unusually large. This puts meat on the bare bones of history. It gives the Society something to work with, for it relates local history to the state and nation. Secondly, the Society has witnessed close harmony between town and gown. Both amateur historians with roots deep in the soil of Rockbridge and professional historians associated with the local colleges have taken a hand in the Society's activities through serving as officers or reading papers. This has given the Society a broader base; it has meant more interest and better history. The diversity of papers offered over the past six years and included in these proceedings offer proof of this.

Of special interest this year is the Civil War Centennial in which the Society will do its part. In that tragic conflict, one where so many contributed so much, it is entirely proper that the first ceremony should be one in memory of all the men of Rockbridge County who took up arms from 1861-1865 to uphold what they thought to be right. In such a ceremony the Society is proud to take a part.

Among the many dedicated supporters of the Rockbridge Historical Society none has done more than Charles Wilson Turner. He is one to whom the credit for these proceedings is due.

George M. Brooke, Jr. President.

#### MINUTES OF JANUARY 31, 1955 MEETING

There was turkey in the kitchen and anticipation in the members at the regular winter meeting of the Rockbridge Historical Society. The meeting was called to order by President Alexander at 6:30 p.m.

Soon the turkey, camouflaged by appropriate material, was on the table, and the Methodist ladies had won still another star in their crown.

After the feast, the minutes were read and approved. Lester Schnare reported for the Library, and asked for help in the accumulation of color-prints of Michael Miley for a future exhibition.

Mrs. McCulloch told of plans for a program on Virginia Indians in the spring. Mrs. Paxton announced that we have received 36 new members in the past twelve months. Dr. Turner asked for a Committee to help prepare an Artifacts Show for the spring, which would be viewed by county school children. Volunteers are also needed for the Photographic Filing project, headed by Messrs. Turner and Schnare.

Mrs. Russell Robey presented a copy of the December 1953 Emory University Quarterly, which has in it an article on "Lee the American" by Plato Durham.

"There's something about a home which gets close to you," commented Mrs. McCulloch in her introduction of the speaker. "If the people who know don't tell what they know, how are we going to preserve the past?"

know don't tell what they know, how are we going to preserve the past?"
One man who is telling is Jay W. Johns, of "Ashlawn," who spoke with contagious enthusiasm about the Stonewall Jackson Memorial. "We're trying to be part and parcel of your community," he began. "We can use Jackson's life and example for the country—especially the young people."

He then told how the Memorial had begun as a beautiful idea with no money—and how one must cajole realtor and realist, giver and governor, to make a project such as this come to life. "It all sounds a little like Amos n' Andy—and it was, too!" admitted Mr. Johns. Despite the many vicissitudes, and the problem of getting a state official to part with a fondly-loved dollar, the property which was the old hospital has been bought, and will be turned into a shrine. With contributions from 20 states as testimony, the program has been launched—one which will eventually bring people from all over the world to Lexington.

"We must stop the tourist, and make a better American of him!" asserted Mr. Johns, "and keep this America's only town which puts no fees on its historical treasures." Firmly believing that the Memorial can do much good for Lexington, Mr. Johns reminded his audience that "our Lord has intrusted Lexington with much that is precious. We should be more militant about protecting it! This house can be the vehicle of such militancy!"

Mr. Johns was even more specific. Among the things which he urged individual members to do were these:

1) ransack the attic for mementos

2) look up all scrap books and old papers

3) cooperate with the over-all plan of the Chamber of Commerce

4) contribute ideas

There was even a suggestion that good U.D.C. members should be pledged to visit Lexington, even as a good Mohammed must visit Mecca. The question of whether or not the house faced the East did not arise.

The Memorial now has 27 pieces of furniture and 50 Jackson letters. The speaker paid special tribute to the hostess, Mrs. Stuart, and the Jackson family, which has given up so many of its possessions.

Thus was the General who stood like a Stone Wall, and who carried his Bible as well as his sword, exonerated, and a new Rockbridge Brigade called to action.

#### MINUTES OF APRIL 25, 1955 MEETING

The Rockbridge Historical Society held its quarterly meeting on April 25, 1955 at the Science Hall of the Virginia Military Institute at 8 P. M. with Col. William Couper presiding.

Charles W. Turner read the minutes, in the absence of the secretary,

which were approved.

Col. C. C. Tutwiler presented the financial report showing that nearly \$500.00 had been spent in painting and repairing the "Castle". Miss Ellen Anderson read a portion of a letter inquiring as to historical data and presented a copy of her published address "On the Wounding of her Father, W. A. Anderson".

Discussion was had on the opening of the "Castle" for Garden Week, April 26, and on May 7, when the public might view the library, documents, picture gallery and artifacts. Thanks was extended to Miss Elizabeth Barclay and Mrs. H. L. Eichelberger for their help in decorating the "Castle" Volunteers were secured to be present at the opening of the "Castle"

Col. C. C. Tutwiler presented the speaker of the evening, Captain John H. Reeves, Jr., of the Biology Department at Virgiina Military Institute, who gave an informative address on the first Virginians-"The Saponi

Indians".

After an introduction discussing early man and his coming to the Americas, he discussed the Indian tribe that lived along the Staunton River, illustrating his lecture with artifacts before him and colored slides. Particularly, he described the Indian remains uncovered by both him and his students at Conner's Midden, located along the Staunton River, in Halifax County, where a village of Saponi Indians was located. Details of their diet, implements, games, dress, burial habits, and religion were interestingly given.

After a question period, the members walked over to the Old Hospital Building to see a museum of artifacts of Indian life. All in attendance

had learned much of the first Virginians.

Captain Reeves said in part:

Conner's Midden Indian village site is located approximately 15 miles from the county seat of Halifax on the property of Mr. Robert G. Conner, a prominent farmer. The Archeological Society of the Virginia Military Institute has secured the right of excavation with the understanding that all recovered materials will be deposited in the Archeological Museum at the Institute. Excavations by the Society were begun in December of 1953.

In so far as the writer is aware, no investigation has clearly indicated the exact group of Indians that inhabited this area, although it is probably

safe to assume that these were people of Siouan stock.

From the kitchen middens, or garbage pits, have come bones of the white-tailed deer, squirrel, rabbit, turkey, other birds, fish and terrapin. In addition to these animal foods, excavators have uncovered charred hickory nuts. No other sources of food are definitely known.

Bone instruments include one needle equipped with an eye, a large number of bone awls, two complete and several broken fish hooks, and a

few chipping tools made from deer antlers.

Stone implements are present in moderate numbers. The majority of these objects may be classified as projectile points; most are triangular in shape and are made either of quartzite or chert. These points show that great care and skill went into their manufacture. In addition to the triangular points, one willow leaf and several stemmed points have been found. These latter points do not exhibit the fine workmanship of the former ones. Perhaps the most interesting stone object is an almost spherical game ball of quartzite. This object is clearly the product of an expert stone worker. A stone pendant, or large bead, with serrated edges was located in the village fill.

Innumerable pottery sherds lie in the soil. All pottery objects are made from a fine grade of clay tempered with small stones. Several unbroken pots have been found. They vary in size from small ones about the size of a walnut to large ones capable of holding several gallons of material. Without exception they have rounded or pointed bottoms and are incapable of standing in an unsupported position. Three interesting pottery implements uncovered appear to have served as spoons or ladles. They are about three inches long; the bowl measuring about one inch across. Fragments of ten and four complete pipes have been found. They are generally of the elbow-type, but one is modeled after a canoe. Pottery discs measuring about one and one quarter inches in diameter and having a thickness of about one quarter inch were recovered; their use is un-

Marine and fresh-water shelled animals were used in the manufacture of beads. One string, nine feet long and containing 140 beads, was fashioned from the columnella of the conch. Smaller beads, some as

small as one eighth inch were scattered over burials.

One of the most interesting finds was a burial of a dog. The animal's remains had been carefully interred within a stone lined grave. The animal's head had been pillowed on a stone with his front legs extended in front of him. His back was arched in such a position that when his hind feet were extended they lay immediately posterior to his fore feet. Just north of, and on the same level with, this burial was the remains of an adult human. The human did not enjoy the comforts of a stone lined grave.

All adult human burials follow the same plan. The bodies are placed on their sides with the legs partially flexed and the feet lying behind the pelvic region. The arms are so placed that the elbows rest on the rib cage with the hands under the head. No burial furniture is found with adult burials. The bones are generally well preserved, but the teeth show

great wear.

Children's burials are more interesting by far. The bodies are placed on their backs with legs extended and arms lying by their sides. The cranium is placed so that the face is looking towards the sky. All children's burials uncovered so far have contained burial goods. Some have had vessels for food and water; almost all have provided large numbers of beads. One burial contained the bodies of three infants; another burial was that of a child whose legs had been amputated just above the knees. It is interesting to speculate on these two types of burials practiced by the same group of people; it could be that something of a religious

nature caused the difference or it could simply be that a flexed body of the adult required a smaller burial hole than did an extended body.

It is hoped that future investigation of this site will give a greater insight into the people who lived here and who roamed this part of our

state.

#### MINUTES OF JULY 25, 1955 MEETING

The Rockbridge Historical Society met 4:30 P.M. July 25, 1955 at the

A. R. Presbyterian Church at Timber Ridge.

The meeting was called to order by the president, Mrs. J. P. Alexander. There were no minutes of the last meeting, the secretary being out of town.

The treasurer's report was read, reporting a balance on hand of

\$1,372.58.

Mr. L. L. Schnare, assistant librarian reported on the artifacts which have been arranged and cataloged at the "Castle". He also reported on a collection of Miley photographs which have been given to the Society, and invited all to come to see them at the "Castle"

Mrs. Alexander announced gifts made to the society from the Misses Smith—a canteen and Confederate Flag carried by "Sandy" Waddell in

the war.

Mrs. McCulloch scheduled the next meeting of the Society for the 4th Monday in October, the subject to be "Miley's Photographs". This meeting was later changed to the 5th Friday in October.

Mrs. Paxton, membership chairman, reported two new members—Mr.

and Mrs. Henry Mackey of Fairfield.

Miss Ellen Anderson, Genealogy Chairman, spoke briefly on the history of the A.R.P. Timber Ridge Church. She recalled visiting the church many years before accompanied by Mr. Letcher, and sketched the building at that time. She surmised that the church was copied from the old Episcopal church in Lexington.

Mrs. Alexander mentioned the redecoration of the "Castle" and asked the members to visit it. Mrs. Eichelberger reported on the curtains made for the building and said she had invited the State meeting of Woman's

Clubs at Natural Bridge to visit the "Castle".

Mr. Schnare reported on the Open House which was held at the "Castle", 60 visitors having registered. Members were asked for appropriate gifts of furniture for the upper rooms.

Mrs. McCulloch, contest chairman, exhibited the essays entered in the competition and commented on their excellence. A letter of thanks was read from Clinton Lee Anderson, the winner of the contest.

A letter was read from the Virginia Historical Society announcing the annual meeting of American Association for State and Local History, September 26 & 27 at Williamsburg, asking our society to send a representative.

Miss Galt of the Mary Custis Lee chapter UDC announced that they were planning a program of Historical Tableaux at the High School in August and asked for ideas.

The visitors and guests present were introduced. The program chairman introduced Dr. Twyman Williams who gave a brief history of the church in which the meeting was being held, and he was followed by the speaker of the day, Dr. D. Lyle Kinnear of V.P.I. Dr. Kinnear spoke most interestingly on "Some People and Events in the Early History of Timber Ridge Community", being centered on Horatio E. Thompson, Minister.

Following the meeting and program, the ladies of the church served dinner in the basement of the church which was enjoyed by all. Dr. Kinnear's address follows:

It is with considerable trepidation that I stand before you in this historical old church and talk about people and events in the history of the Timber Ridge Community. When a most casual examination of records shows that at least two presidents of Washington and Lee University, a former governor of Virginia, numerous doctors of divinity, and professional as well as amateur historians have made Timber Ridge Community and its people the objects of their investigations and addresses, I am all the more aghast at my temerity. I believe I understand somewhat how Daniel must have felt when he suddenly found himself in the den of lions, but frankly this is the first time I have ever heard of his

being invited to add to the uproar.

It is a bit difficult to talk about people and events in the history of Timber Ridge without repeating already told stories or parts of stories. For example, Timber Ridge has been investigated and discussed from all the following standpoints, just to indicate a few: (a) the oldest community in Rockbridge County, (b) the site of the first permanent settlement in Rockbridge, (c) the site of the oldest church in Rockbridge, (d) the birthplace of Sam Houston, (e) the birthplace of the Lexington Presbytery, (f) the mother of at least four Presbyterian churches, (g) the birthplace of numerous Revolutionary War heroes, (h) the rallying point for defense against the Indians and as (i) the birthplace of Liberty Hall Academy, now Washington and Lee University. If we consider the printed page, we again find that Timber Ridge has not been neglected. For example, the inquisitive researcher will find material dealing with Timber Ridge in such publications as the following, representative but not complete, list: Morton, History of Rockbridge County; Waddell, Annals of Augusta County; Foote, Sketches of Virginia; Couper, History of the Shenandoah Valley; Washington and Lee Historical Papers (especially the "Lyle Chapter" in the history of Washington College as prepared by Henry Ruffner), Chalkley, Chronicles of Augusta County; Minutes of the Hanover Presbytery and of the Lexington Presbytery, biographical and genealogical material on old Timber Ridge families, such as the Alexanders, Campbells, Davidsons, Houstons, Lyles, McClures, McClungs and others; the D.A.R. Genealogy Records; miscellaneous addresses celebrating the founding of the Old Stone Church at Timber Ridge. (This church has celebrated its founding every fifty years for the past one hundred fifty years); and miscellaneous historical sketches and past one hundred fifty years.); and miscellaneous historical sketches and pamphlets published by the Timber Ridge Presbyterian Church.

With all this background of recorded material so generally distributed and available, I make no apology if I repeat some of it, although I shall PURPOSELY and INTENTIONALLY endeavor to avoid detailed discussions of people and events already depicted elsewhere. Specifically the remainder of this paper will be devoted to (a) general background necessary to understand the community, (b) some of the people and some of their homes, (c) some events in the history of the community, (d) some genealogical material. Such a discussion may not have the adventure of a Sam Houston, the thrill of a Liberty Hall, or the inspiration of a Timber Ridge Church; but it certainly will have some of the

If one attempts to define the boundaries of Timber Ridge Community, he immediately encounters difficulty, for the boundaries have never been exact, seeming in fact to change from generation to generation. The early settlers found most of Rockbridge covered with a short covering of brush, vines, and grassy vegetation. A ridge, or series of ridges, almost paralleling the present Lee Highway and extending to within a few miles of Lexington on the south and Fairfield on the North was early discovered, however, to be rather densely covered with fine timber. The first settlers thereupon called these ridges Timber Ridge (using the singular), and thus it has been called ever since, although for the greatest part these ridges today are covered with cultivated farms rather than forests. When in 1746 the settlers built their first church on this ridge, it too was called Timber Ridge and is so called to this day. The early settlers in this community were predominantly Scotch-Irish, and the story of Timber Ridge is but another chapter in the story of the

sturdy, God-fearing Scotch-Irish race in America.

Documentary evidence credits Ephriam McDowell as being the first on a site close to the present home of Mrs. Louise Houston Alexander. McDowell's claim to priority is often disputed on Timber Ridge in 1737 on a site close to the present home of Mrs. Louise Houston Alexander. McDowell's claim to priority is often disputed on Timber Ridge, however, where a persistent and at one time wide-spread tradition gave credit to John Mcky (Mackey) as having settled in the community about 1727, but being a hunter Mcky did not file homestead rights until sometime of tor McDowell filed his By 1750 the community was rather with time after McDowell filed his. By 1750 the community was rather well filled up with the Scotch-Irish immigrants, while by the Revolution the community had so nearly filled up that sons of these early pioneers were spilling over into the southwestern part of the state and elsewhere. A rather casual tracing of the descendants of the early Timber Ridge settlers will reveal many of these sons as filling or having filled with fidelity such positions as those of governor, congressmen, ministers, missionaries, doctors, lawyers, judges, authors, army officers, and above all pioneers in the westward expansion and development of the country. By the Revolution the court and the church records were filled with family names common to Timber Ridge and Rockbridge to this day. For example, to name only a few, we find such family names as Alexander, Campbell, Cummings, Davidson, Henry, Hileman, Houston, Kinnear, Lyle, Lackey, Mackey, McClung, McClure, Patton, Paxton, Sterrett, and Wilson. In many instances the descendants of these families still living on Timber Ridge are living on farms or in homes once owned by these early ancestors. The late J. W. McClung in his small book, THE HISTORICAL SIGNIFICANCE OF ROCKBRIDGE COUNTY does an interesting job of

locating and tracing to the original grantor many of the old homes in the county. As far as Timber Ridge is concerned, however, the work is far from complete and in several instances at least gets the names correct but the deeds incorrect. There are several homes in the community more than a hundred years old, while some are at least one hundred fifty years old. Perhaps the two most picturesque among the latter are Loyd and Lelia Cummings' home and Mrs. Inez Mackey Williams' home. Both of these houses are built of native stone and have been in the Cummings and the Mackey families for more than a hundred fifty years. Perhaps the most picturesque house on Timber Ridge and one years. Perhaps the most picturesque house on Timber Ridge and one having housed more generations of related Timber Ridge folk than any other house in "Edgehill", now owned by Dr. Twyman Williams and occupied by his two sons, John Lyle, who is unmarried, and Billy, and Billy's wife, Sue Mackey Williams, and their children. It is not clear as to the original builder of this house situated a little more than a hundred yards to the northwest of the Lee Highway as the highway reaches the extreme foot of the hill below Timber Ridge Church. In 1773 the property was owned by Alexander Stuart who was granted a license to build a mill on the site. Alexander Stuart sold the property to Duncan Campbell, the son of Dougal and Mary Campbell, who settled in Rock-Campbell, the son of Dougal and Mary Campbell who settled in Rockbridge about 1780 on a farm purchased from Captain John Lyle who in turn removed to Kentucky. Duncan Campbell bequeathed the home to his son Alexander Campbell, a captain in the War of 1812. Alexander Campbell never married but left the property to his sister Elizabeth who married William Alexander, a son of Captain Joseph Alexander of "Roseley" and his wife Sarah Reid. "Roseley" incidentally was a beautiful old stone house standing on a farm east of and adjoining the present Williams (Mackey) farm. The walls cracked so badly, however, a few years ago that the house was torn down. William Alexander left the "Edgehill" property to his daughter, Margaret who in 1825 married Samuel Woods Lyle who then lived in the house until his death in 1881. Shortly after Samuel Lyle's death the property passed, by inheritance and purchase to his only daughter, Elizabeth Campbell, the wife of John A. Kinnear. John and Elizabeth in turn deeded the property to their daughter Margaret and her husband Thomas A. Sterrett who reared their family here. Following the Sterrett ownership the house passed out of the direct family connection for a while and then was bought by Annabel Lyle and her husband, W. Twyman Williams. Billy Williams' children, presently living in the home, makes the seventh generation of the Campbell-Alexander-Lyle blood to live in this old house. The house itself of frame construction was built at two different times. A family tradition has it that Samuel Lyle built the second part of the house to care for his family. This addition gave him one of the best homes in the immediate vicinity and, still according to tradition, touched off some jealously which led Dr. Horatio Thompson to build the lovely home presently occupied by Captain and Mrs. H. E. Thompson. Before building this house about 1836, Dr. Thompson had been living in the old log house birthplace of Sam Houston which, according to a letter recently found by the writer from Hannah Kinnear McClung to her brother John A. Kinnear, was and had been for sometime in a shabby and run down condition. For some years the Thompson home held undisputed claim to being the handsomest on Timber Ridge until eventually John Gibson, still according to tradition, determined to build one yet bigger and thereupon built the beautiful Maple Hall just below Timber Ridge Church.

As to be expected there was considerable intermarrying of old families on Timber Ridge with the result that family names of one generation often became given names of another. This fact, along with the tendency to cling to the usage of given names, has made searching old family records quite difficult and confusing. For example, there were four Andrew Kinnears and four Susan Kinnears living within two miles of Timber Ridge Church around 1812. The use of middle names, a practice

which seems to have started on Timber Ridge around 1800, helped somewhat for identification purposes. This internarrying of old family lines often produced interesting groupings of fan.ilies in one generation only to bring about a reshuffled grouping within the next generation. For example at one period we find intermarrying bringing about such family grouping or kinship as Alexander-Campbell-Lyle-Reid or McClung-Patton-Wilson-Sterrett or Kinnear-McCune-McCown-Tate or Lackey-Hamilton-Taylor-Gibson and so on. By the next generation these family lines almost invariably showed a reshuffling to such an extent that today the descendants of these early families yet living in Rockbridge are almost all inter related in some manner or other. Oftentimes, however, the exact relationship is difficult to show, since with the exception of the Houston and the Lyle families very few if any of the numerous genealogies relating to the above families do more than show a few branches of the family in question. The Rockbridge Historical Society is to be commended for its efforts to arouse the interest of descendants yet living and to encourage them to extend these genealogies to include, as far as possible,

all branches of the families mentioned.

It might be stimulating at this time to turn aside for a while from a consideration of people to a brief consideration of some of the happenings of the community. Both churches at Timber Ridge are of ancient origin, the Old Stone Presbyterian Church having been organized in 1746. So many historical pamphlets are available on the Stone Church, however, that I shall not discuss it further. The Associate Reformed Presbyterian Church was established on Timber Ridge about October 21, 1778, by Joseph Little and William McClung. For a long while worship was held at a site near the Timber Ridge Depot. In 1814, however, the congregations of the two churches began using the Old Stone Church for worship on alternate Sundays. About 1815 Andrew Ross Heron assumed the pastorship of Timber Ridge and Ebenezer Associate Reformed congregation. At the same time he accepted a professorship in languages at Washington College. In 1818, however, the pressure of ecclesiastical duties compelled him, against the earnest wishes of the college officials, to give up the professorship. Heron, a very capable and competent man, seems to have endeared himself to many of his congregation while at the same time estranging himself from the rest. Sometime about 1832 the Synod to which the Timber Ridge congregation belonged adopted a rule excluding all slaveholders from the communion of the church. The responsibility for casting out the slaveholders was placed squarely on the minister. This act placed Heron in quite a dilemma. He saw at once that the policy if applied to Timber Ridge would be tantamount to closing the church, since nearly all of the members owned one or more slaves. His solution, according to his less ardent friends, was simple. He gave up his pastorship and moved west to free territory. Organizing a group of the younger members of his congregation at Timber and at Ebenezer he moved with them to Greene County, Ohio, where he organized the Caesars Creek Associate Presbyterian Church near Jamestown and Xenia. A list of the settlers in that section of Ohio around 1840 reveals many names, such as Brownlee, Gilmore, Harper, Lackey, McClung, Orbison, Tate, and Taylor, common to Rockbridge of that day.

While moving to Ohio solved the problem for Heron it did not solve it for the church which, following Heron's departure, secured Dr. Horatio Thompson as a minister. Dr. Thompson, a peaceful, courteous man, never shirked an issue and never flinched in line of duty as he saw it. He did not regard slaveholding as a sin; in fact, he had just married into the John Kinnear family which at the time owned numerous slaves. He determined, therefore, neither to obey the order of his Synod nor to retreat to non-slaveholding territory. In the words of Ruffner, "He stood his ground and about 1845 he united with some like-minded brethren in separating from the Northern Church, forming a Presbytery in connec-

tion with the Southern Associate Reformed Synod."

In 1855-56 while both congregations were yet using the same building a dispute developed between the congregations of the two churches on Timber Ridge which unhappily split the community and many families wide apart. As a consequence of this dispute the Associate Reformed Presbyterians at a meeting held May 10, 1856 and presided over by Robert Templeton appointed "Joseph Kirkpatrick, A. Patton, and J. Gibson" a committee to secure a building site and to report on specifications and cost of a separate building to be used by the Associate Reformed Congregation. At the same time another committee consisting of William Davidson, John Gibson, and Joseph Kinnear was appointed to confer with "The Presbyterian Church of this place (Timber Ridge) for the purpose of establishing our claim to worship in the Old Timber Ridge Church". The outcome of this dispute was the erection of the present Associate Reformed Presbyterian Church on a site donated by Dr. Horatio Thompson who in turn had come by the land through inheritance and purchase from his wife's Kinnear kin. So great was the bitterness at the time that the A.R.P.'s, as they often called themselves, determined to use a style of architecture that would clearly differentiate the church from the Old Stone Church just across the road. The present unit of the church was completed; but before additional units could be built, the War Between The States broke out and Timber Ridge families, divided on religion, united to a man in an effort to repel the invader. Following the war both churches had a difficult time to keep going; in fact, Dr. Horatio Thompson of the Associate Reformed Presbyterian Church preached and labored for nearly a year after the close of the war without receiving one dollar in salary.

In economic development the Timber Ridge Community followed the

In economic development the Timber Ridge Community followed the rest of the Valley of Virginia, particularly with respect to slavery and agriculture. Time will not permit a presentation showing the impact of the interrelationships between religion, education, politics, and natural geography on the community, fascinating though the contemplation of this impact would be. Suffice it to say that on the eve of the War Between The States many farmers were coming more and more to rely on slave labor. For example, on one farm in 1800 there was one slave; by 1840 this same farm had five slaves, while by 1860 this same farm was

using fifteen slaves.

Between 1837 and 1860 John A. Kinnear operated a store at a site just north of the present A.R.P. Church. Part of the time he was in partnership with William McClung and James Lyle, and part of the time he operated the store independently. His store account books, although incomplete for the entire period, give considerable information to the careful reader. These books for 1843 reveal very few family names different from those having settled on Timber Ridge prior to the Revolution; in fact, out of some hundred fifty names checked by the writer the only new ones discovered were Michael Diedrick (probably a forebear of Mr. E. K. Paxton of Lexington), Clarissa and Albert Escue, Richard Trussler, and Benjamin Higgenbotham.

Another fact of no great significance but none the less interesting was the habit, practiced in the store, of extending credit or charge accounts to family slaves. Thus we find bona fide charge accounts set up for Davidsons' Rachel; Gibsons' Bettie and Mack; Kinnears' Austin, Phoebe and Jack; Lackeys' Archie and Patsy, and so on for numerous other families of the community. The servants in question, for thus they were almost invariably called in the old family records, bought such items as cigars, candy, gloves, pocket knives, eggs, hats, and calico. Whether the owners or the slaves themselves paid the final bill the

records do not show.

It is my understanding that papers presented at these annual summer meetings, at points throughout the county, are supposed to include some reference to the genealogy of one or more families presently living in the community, preferably a family with which the speaker is connected. With this custom in mind I am including a few genealogical notes which I have collected from time to time.

I have purposely put this genealogy last so that in case I am mistaken the genealogical portion can be separated from the remainder of this

Recently, in looking through some old papers at my old home on Timber Ridge, I found numerous requests for genealogical material on the Rockbridge Kinnears to be included in forth-coming genealogical publications. As far as I can determine no compliance to these requests was ever made, although John A. Kinnear to whom the requests were directed, did help Oskar Lyle collect material for his book THE LYLE FAMILY. For no good reason other than to satisfy my curiosity I have prepared a genealogy of the Timber Ridge branch of the Rockbridge Kinnears, a portion of which is as follows:

Andrew Kinnear and his wife Susannah, the first Kinnears of record in the county, settled near Raphine in 1773. Andrew had been in the county (then Augusta) for sometime prior to this date. During the Revolution he served in the Augusta Militia in Captain Samuel Mc-Cutchan's company. In 1783 he removed to Timber Ridge and settled on the farm presently owned by Mrs. Bessie Moore Falls. The Kinnears were descended from a long line of Scotch-Irish Presbyterians, many being ministers, one of whom, a member of Andrew's branch of the family remaining in Ulster, Ireland, had the distinction of being the first Presbyterian minister ever to sit in the British Parliament.

Andrew and Susannah had five children, three girls and two boys, all of whom married and settled for a while at least in Rockbridge, Nancy, the oldest, married John McCown, and from this union we find many descendants, including among others Walter McCown and his sister Mrs. Agnes Berry, and Mary and Daniel McNeil of Lexington. The second daughter, Hannah, married Andrew Stuart in 1794 and had several children beneated to the second daughter. eral children; however, the record for this line is incomplete. The third daughter, Susan, married Michael Kirkpatrick and reared a large family, John, in 1791 married Elizabeth McCune, daughter of John McCune of Augusta. There were nine children of this union, three of whom, Dr. John M., Margaret, and Martha, moved to Missouri about 1832. Four of the children, Andrew, Givens, Pauline, and Nancy died childless. Susan married William Davidson and of this union there are numerous des married William Davidson, and of this union there are numerous descendants, including John Kinnear Davidson and Mrs. Richard Irby of Lexigton. Eliza married Dr. Horatio Thompson and reared a large family, many of whose descendants, notably Captain and Mrs. H. E. Thompson, are yet living in Rockbridge. (Couper in his History of the Shenandoah Valley says that Joseph Kinnear was Dr. Thompson's father-in-law. This is an error and should read John Kinnear.)

Andrew and Susannah's youngest son, Andrew, in 1804 married Margaret Tate, daughter of Joseph Tate, who moved from Augusta to Rockbridge in 1781. There were five children of this union. Hannah married John S. McClung and moved to Greene County, Ohio, where she reared a family of ten children. Susan married William Withrow and settled in Brownsburg. Andrew Heron married Julia Anne Orbison and had one daughter, Margaret Tate, who married James Ballagh in 1861 and went with him as a missionary to Japan. They had four children, Carrie, Curtis, Anne and Wilbur. All four of these children married and have descen-

dants living today, none of whom, however, are living in Rockbridge.

Joseph Kinnear never married. He died in camp during the War Between the States. John Alexander married Margaret Campbell Lyle, daughter of Samuel Woods Lyle. Five children of this union grew to adulthood, married, and reared families in Rockbridge. Margaret married Thomas A. Sterrett, and reared five children, none of whose descendants are now living in Rockbridge. Lauretta married Rufus L. Patterson and lived in Brownsburg. John K. Patterson of Staunton is her only surviving

offspring. William A. Kinnear married Retta Wilson. William A. Kinnear, Jr. is his only surviving child. Mrs. Lecky Kinnear of Lexington is the widow of William A. Senior's eldest son, Lecky. Susan Kinnear married Frank L. McClung and reared five children on Timber Ridge and in Lexington. The children of Mrs. Elizabeth Bell McClung, and the late Kendall McClung are the only descendants of Frank and Susan McClung yet living in Rockbridge. John Joseph Lyle Kinnear, so named for three older brothers who died in infancy, married Rachel Lackey and reared a family of seven on Timber Ridge. Mrs. W. Y. Patton and her

family of Lexington and Horace L. Kinnear and his family of Timber Ridge are the only descendants remaining in Rockbridge.

Another family name very prevalent on Timber Ridge from the Revolution to the present is that of Lackey. Time will not permit a detailed presentation of this family connections although it might be said that there are several families of Lackeys in Rockbridge which do not seem to be interrelated. The Timber Ridge branch of this family seemingly started with Thomas Lackey who married an Anderson sometime prior to 1777 as his first wife and Jemima Taylor in 1801 as his second wife. There were seven children by these two marriages whose descendants are now scattered over the entire United States. One son, Major William Lackey, married Phoebe Hamilton and remained on Timber Ridge in the home now owned by the C. P. Green heirs. Here this couple reared Lackey who married J. J. L. Kinnear, and of her brother W. Horace Lackey of Lexington. He was also the great grandfather of Mrs. Lewis Whittaker Adams, wife of Dr. Adams of the Washington and Lee Faculty. One more event about the Scotch-Irish of Timber Ridge and I am through. About the year 1746 a group of German immigrants intending to

settle in Rockingham County found that county rather well occupied. They decided, therefore, to push farther southwest. Arriving near the present site of Staunton, they spent the night. The next day they pushed on and spent the following night near Timber Ridge. The next day they pushed on with all haste and eventually settled in Montgomery County at a site to this day called Prices Forks. After getting settled, one member of this group wrote back to friends in Rockingham that in passing the "Irish" settlements (near Staunton and Timber Ridge) they had found the natives to be a pugnacious, cantankerous, quarrelsome lot, not to be sought out as neighbors. Unfortunately I told my wife, who is a direct descendant of one of these early German pioneers, this story with the result that she constantly finds occasion to remind me of these traits of my ancestors. Today I have brought her with me, and I always try to bring her with me when I revisit Rockbridge so that she may see that there are at least some of the descendants of the Scotch-Irish who are not unduly pugnacious, cantankerous, and quarrelsome.

#### MINUTES OF OCTOBER 31, 1955 MEETING

The meeting was called to order at 8 p.m. by President Alexander, and in short order the members were traveling back in memory over the last two years as various reports covering that period were submitted. "We are fortunate to have so many people who have given their time and talent to furthering the Rockbridge Historical Society," Mrs. Alexander states—and the ensuing reports confirmed what she claimed.

There was news of things done, collected, sought after, and accomplished. Mr. Earl Paxton, librarian, told of gifts ranging from a humble sausage grinder to a complete stair case. He told of new books which reaffirmed our heritage, and of one (Norbert Lyon's THE McCORMICK REAPER LEGEND, which insists that Robert and not Cyrus McCormick invented the reaper) which challenged it. Miss Elizabeth Barclay exhibited a score of fascinating objects, and told of her determination to turn our sun porch into an early apothecary shop.

"Please get up in the attic before you get to the point where you CAN'T get up!" she admonished. Miss Ellen Anderson told of a recent excursion to the attic, and of some 50 letters in the field of genealogy which she has received since 1953. Mrs. P. L. Paxton reported 46 new members since January, 1954; and noted with regret the death of 4 others. At the request of the executive committee, a special tribute for the late Lester Schnare was prepared and read by Dr. Turner.

Mrs Ruth McCulloch summarized two year's programs, which have dealt with Indians and many settlers since. She also told of the conception and progress of her Essay Contest. Dr. Turner reported that the Library has almost doubled in two years, that our documents have been properly catalogued, and that the whole building has been renovated.

The PROCEEDINGS through 1954 have also been published.

Dr. Cole Davis reported a slate from the Nominating Committee,

President—Col. William Couper 2 VP-Mr. Houston Barclay 4 VP-Hon. Price Daniel 6 VP-Miss Willa E. Moose

1 VP-Mrs. J. P. Alexander 3 VP-Mrs. Maxwell Tracy 5 VP-Dr. W. D. Hoyt, Jr. 7 VP-Mrs. Va. C. Shattuck

Corresp. Sect.-Mrs. Alvin Oakes Treasurer—Miss Lula Dunlap

Rec. Sec.-M. W. Fishwick Librarian-C. W. Turner

Upon a motion from the floor the secretary was empowered to cast one vote for the slate, indicating unanimous approval of the members.

Mr. George Barns spoke briefly on "Virginia Heritage Month" (Jan. 19-Feb. 22), and urged the Society to assist with the travel plans in every

possible way.

Mrs. Alexander then reported on the September 25-27 Williamsburg meeting of the State and Local History Association. She told of the exhibits, speeches, tours, and of the great interest shown in the Rockbridge Historical Society exhibit which she oversaw during her stay. Not only the intrinsic merit of our wares, but the extrinsic merit of Mr. Johen-

ning's king-size sign, was extolled.

The Secretary, M. W. Fishwick, gave the speech of the evening. His topic was "The Magnificent Valley," and the paper dealt with the legends, history, and mores of the Valley from Indian times forward. Mr. Fishwick explained that the paper was meant to serve as a general summary, and not a scholarly monograph. He pointed out that no one would dare tackle specific points of Valley history while a man of Col. Couper's knowledge and experience sat idly by: and on this point, at least, there was no dissent.

Dr. Fishwick's address follows:

"You got to cross that lonesome Valley, You got to cross it by yourself." -Southern folk song.

The Valley of Virginia is motley and magnificent; every corner of it is full of history. There could be no more appropriate subject on which to speak to the Rockbridge Historical Society, and I am grateful for this

opportunity to do so.

I can cover only a small fraction of that history, and those who have been in the Valley. In fact, I shall try to tell something of the life and times of a single native, in the hope that by knowing one, we can understand a bit more about all. He would grow up to find the eyes of Texas and indeed the whole nation, on him. But Sam Houston, like many other great Americans, is rooted in the Valley of Virginia.

The Indians loved the Valley, and used it as an inter-tribal hunting ground. They named it Shenandoah-"Daughter of the Stars." No one knows how many centuries they had used and loved it when a German pioneer named John Lederer visited the Valley in 1669. His report to Governor William Berkeley attracted little attention; but in the century following, the Valley would be opened to others, and turned into one of

the garden spots of the new world.

The Germans and the Scotch-Irish were the two main ethnic groups involved Palatinate Germans, Mennonites, Lutherans, and Quakers led the way into what was then frontier country. There were no roads—only buffalo and Indian trails. Legends of wild beasts and venomous serpents abounded; it was 130 years after Jamestown's settlement that the first white people came to what we now call Rockbridge County. (I shall not

retell the story of Borden's Grant, which has been so admirably handled in the papers and book of the late Dr. E. P. Tompkins.)

The main highway for newcomers, called the "Great Path," followed in general what is now route 11. Before his death, Dr. Tompkins completed research that convinced him that over 75,000 people passed down it even before the Path became wide enough for wheeled vehicles. It was indeed the road of destiny in this part of the world. The usual procedure was for settlers to land in Philadelphia, make their way across Pennsylvania, and cross the Potomac at Harper's Ferry. After that the

long walk south into the Valley proper began.

With one such immigrant—John Houston—our Valley vignette begins.

After taking up 307 acres in 1752, Gentleman John passed this on (minus about an acre for the Timber Ridge Church, which he helped build in 1756) to his son Robert. Having married one of the pink-cheeked Davidson girls, Robert built the two-story log house in which his children and grandchildren would be born. He gave it the name of the nearby church: Timber Ridge. The man and the house prospered. \*

Here was a typical Scotch-Irish story. These were as rugged a group as ever took to the open road; as fair-minded opinionated, and frugal a people as Europe produced. So great was the fear of God in their hearts that there was no room left to fear man or beast. An old quatrain

still heard in the Valley sums it up:

They raised them rough, they raised them well; When their feet were set in the paths of hell They put in their souls the fear of God And tanned their hides with a stiff ramrod.

Persecuted in Dundee, the Scotch-Irish fled to Ulster. Roman Catholics opposed them; the English monarchs branded them dissenters. Unwilling to bow to man-made authority, they sailed to the New Worldthe Houstons, Wallaces, McDowells, Alexanders, Paxtons, Campbells, Douglases, McCorkles. They spread out over the hills and valleys of

eastern America. They are still there.

Because Germans had already taken over what became Shenandoah, Rockingham, and Frederick counties, the Scots pushed south into Augusta, Rockbridge and Botetourt. As soon as their families had roofs over their head, they built churches to worship their God—not a creature of sweetness and light, but a full-blown sinewy Father. Wolves were still howling on the ridges when pioneers erected their first meeting houses. As early as 1738 they petitioned John Caldwell at the Presbyterian Synod in Philadelphia to "procure the favor and countenance of the Government" in the matter of church-building. These people did not expect an easy time. Their outlook enabled them to withstand the wear and tear of pioneering. "Dear God, set our feet in the right way," began a popular prayer; "for if we start in the wrong way, there can be nae changing." The spirits of Calvin and Knox stalked the land. "Speak to sad hearts, they are everywhere" was the rule.

They wove and spun, rocked the young and buried the dead, set table

<sup>\*</sup> When the house burned after the Civil War, a new one was built on the old foundations. The mantel, door-knobs, and latches of the original structure were used, and may be seen there today.

with food grown by their own hands. As Philip Fithian discovered when he visited the Valley in 1775, there was little Cavalier dash or romance here. No one would confuse this with the Tidewater plantation area.

Yet no one could call the Scotch-Irish glum, or as methodically solemn as their German neighbors. They laughed as hard as they prayed. They were not afraid to wrestle with the devil and give him an underhold. They climbed hills so they could wash their faces in the clouds and see miles of rolling green land not unlike that of bonny Scotland.

Strong country, this, with the placid blue mountains brooding over the valleys like a mother hen. Beautiful country, with the deep purple of the violet and white of the dogwood in spring; the sound of summer rain on the shingle roofs; and the crackling of dry corn stalks in autumn. The soil and the soul were united. No one could, or would separate them.

Underneath the blanket of beauty was a layer of loneliness. A man could work all day with his hands his only company. He learned to listen for the screech of a soaring bird, or the sound water makes when it gushes over limestone ledges. At nights, he heard the wail of wolves and plaints of whippoor-wills; knew the stealthy and eyeless fear which crept through the floorboards; said silent prayers for sunlight to fill up the chinks in the wall and warm cold aching bones.

James Ireland, a Baptist circuit rider who toured the Valley in 1765, found the various groups "living in a common state of sociability." In the whole Shenandoah Valley there were by then about 20,000 whites and a thousand Negroes. That number jumped to 71,000 whites and 12,000 Negroes by the time Sam Houston, Jr. was born in 1793. \*

The Valley's chief crops were grains (rye, oats, corn, and wheat), although there were also herds of cattle which were driven north to market. The AUGUSTA JUDGMENTS for August, 1767, indicates that Virginia had cowboy problems long before the days of the Chisolm Trail. A Valley farmer's crops had been trampled by the migrating herd of William Crow. "Crow's drove," the plaintiff testified, "increased damnable."

The Valley was used for grazing long before the white man's arrival. The Indians, for whom the Valley was an inter-tribal hunting ground, burned off trees to encourage the herds of buffalo. The first settlers found the grass so high that men could tie it across their saddles. There was still no shortage of lumber for log cabins. Whipsaws and broadaxes were used to build them; they were filled with children and with faith.

Sam Houston grew up in the frontier world, perched on the hither edge of free land. He rode horseback, hunted, and swam in Mill Creek. Land—its acquisition, defense, consolidation—would be the chief motif of Houston's life; and he spent that incredible life moving between civilization and savagery. This fact would strip him of European clothes and put him in buckskin and moccasin; send him to live with the Cherokees; and give him the vision and power to bring the Republic of Texas into being.

<sup>\*</sup> E. B. Greene and V. D. Harrington, American Population Before 1790.

The most famous of the historians of the American frontier, Frederick Jackson Turner, has compiled a list of traits which life on the cutting edge of civilization engendered: a coarseness and strength combined with acuteness and inquisitiveness; a practical, inventive turn of mind, quick to find expedients; a masterful grasp of material things. Lacking the artistic but powerful to effect great ends; a restless, nervous energy; a dominant individualism, working for good and for evil; and a buoyancy and exuberance which comes from freedom. \*

As one contemplates such a list, names of nineteenth century Americans rist out of the ether; Daniel Boone, Kit Carson, Davy Crockett,

Bigfoot Wallace, Sam Houston.

What held the frontier together was the family; only strong ones endured. This was especially true when (as in the Houston family) the father died and left the young children. Boys became men overnight.

They had to.

Social activity centered around the church and court house square. Sabbath services began in the forenoon, and lasted until evening, with a brief intermission for dinner. Administration of the Lord's Supper began on Friday and lasted four days. Since the Houstons lived only a hundred yards from Timber Ridge church, they undoubtedly met and entertained many neighbors on such occasions. At the south end of the County, nearer the Naural Bridge for which it was named, cousin Samuel Houston was the minister of Falling Spring Church from 1791 to 1820. The church flourished under his leadership. When he took over the pulpit 51 people had subscribed to the church building fund. (Seven of these—Mary and Phoebe Paxton, Jane and Sarah Baggs, Mary Greenlee, Jane McClure, and Mary Crawford—were women.) The number jumped to 63 by 1809. First class pews were sold at 4 shillings and 6 pence per foot, second class at 4 shillings, third class at 3 shillings 6 pence, and fourth class at 3 shillings. The Reverend Sam preached the word of God vigorously and faithfully. He knew that many were called but few were chosen. \*

Rockbridge County, which was cut off from Augusta and Botetourt by a January 12, 1778 act of the General Assembly, was (like the county seat, named after the battle of Lexington, Mass.) only fifteen years old when Sam Houston,, Jr. was born. Lexington's early history was filled with sweat, smoke, and stamina. The town was begun by auction, destroyed in 1796 by fire, and rebuilt by lottery. This was the Houstons' closest contact with organized society; and if the county court records for the late eighteenth century are fair indication, that society had a

strong anti-social streak.

Neighbor Charles Given brought suit against Francis McDonald — for biting off his left ear. An Indian boy named Nat accused the Widow Greenlee of holding him in slavery .The Sheriff showed that Judith Ryley had killed her bastard child. He also proved that Elizabeth Berry had stolen a shirt—for which she received 25 lashes on her bare back. Malcolm McCown, on the other hand, received no punishment for participating in the murder of Cornstalk and three other Indians. Experience, not logic is the basis of the law: especially on the frontier.

Some idea of the way in which the court dealt with religious misdemeanors can be gathered from three other cases preserved in the records. John Moore was jailed for staying away from public worship. William Gray was presented to the grand jury for driving his wagon on

<sup>\*</sup> Frederick Jackson Turner, "The Significance of the Frontier in American History."

<sup>\*</sup> See W. T. Williams' "Yesteryears of Falling Spring Church," in Proceedings of Rockbridge County Historical Society, vol. I, p. 43 f.

Sunday. Sam Jack spent a day in jail, and was fined fifty pounds, for suggesting that the Army could go to hell as far as he was concerned.\*

When John Houston came to the Valley, many different tribes still used it as a hunting ground: Iroquois, Delaware, Shawnee, Catawba, Cherokee, Chickasaw. They traveled up and down the Great Path, or across the Occaneechee Trace from Tidewater. Before the French and Indian War, many stories of friendly relations between the whites and natives circulated. Margaret Lynn Lewis, whose husband helped found Augusta County, wrote one such tale in her diary:

"My daughter has many friends among the Indians. They call her a sweet name, "White Dove." One of the chief's sons, a lad of 16, crowned her with a prarie rose wreath and gave her a fawn which has become domesticated now . . . "

Later on this friendliness disappeared, and Indian attacks plagued the Valley. Despite this, many Indians won respect for their courage and integrity. One such figure was the Shawnee Chief Cornstalk, majestic and princely, considered a great orator by men who had heard Patrick Henry and Richard Henry Lee. It was Cornstalk who fought General Lewis at Point Pleasant. Later on, while holding peace talks under a flag of truce, he was treacherously killed on November 11, 1777. Growing up a generation later, young Sam Houston undoubtedly heard stories of Cornstalk. Certainly the sympathy and understanding for the Red Men which he later displayed stems from his childhood days. Not without reason did the Cherokees later adopt him and give him the name of Co-lon-neh (the Raven). During Houston's entire administration as president of Texas, not an Indian tribe violated a treaty with his government.

The history of his family and county not only taught Sam Houston about the Indians, but also how to defend himself against them or any enemy. His father was a professional soldier—for 23 years a brigadier inspector in the Virginia Militia, an expert at Frontier warfare. Even if his father had followed another calling, young Sam would have known a good deal about military defense. The church which was a stone's throw from his house was designed so it could also be used as a fort. County settlers had erected several blockhouses, with the upper story wider than the lower so riflemen could fire down on any invader. In teams of six they would hoist the logs into place as the master carpenter shouted: "See that you carry your corners up plumb, my boys, I couldn't stand to see them leaning over whopper-jawed!" Sometimes a handspike would slip and a log would drop; an un-Presbyterian oath would go rolling down across the Valley, a hand might get crushed, but the work would go on.

The women, strong but not strong enough for this, worked on straight-grained logs which they sawed into blocks, split in two, and quartered with the axe. Discarding the heart and the sapwood, they worked the pieces left with frow and mallet into long shingles for the roof.

Usually these buildings had stone foundations and a basement room underground. Through the stone walls were loopholes, just wide enough to permit passage of a rifle, splayed outside to give wider range. There was such a structure on Mill Creek, where the Houston boys swam in the summer; another on Walker's Creek. Learning how to deal with Indians was as much a part of the education of frontier youths as learning how to drive in heavy traffic for teen-agers today.

<sup>\*</sup> Rockbridge County Court records, books 1-5. Lexington, Virginia. See also Marquis James, The Raven, A Biography of Sam Houston (New York, 1929), ch. 1.

Actually, most of young Sam's education was got from nature, not books. True enough, between 1801 and 1807 he intermittently attended the story-and-a-half school on his father's farm which had once housed Liberty Hall Academy; but he was not a good student.\* He preferred to do his reading in his own house, stretched before the five-foot mantel in the walnut-paneled living room his grandfather built. He was better with a rifle than with a book. The one exception was Homer's Iliad, which he read with great interest and admiration.

This was the world in which Sam Houston grew up — a world solidly Scotch-Irish, colored red with the petals of rosebud and the blood of pioneers, anchored to stern Calvinist doctrines, relieved by the excesses of pioneer humor and abandon. It was solid, not sentimental. Those who

didn't fit in where hated out.

This was rough country—and it got rougher every mile west. Most of the people beyond Botetourt lived lonely lives in rude log cabins. Through their wide-throated stone chimneys went the thin wisps of smoke which tied them to heaven. Beds were merely poles laid on a framework, built in the corner and supported by blocks of wood. On the horizon were the unconquerable Alleghanies, underseamed with coal and massive resistance. On these mountains was an ocean of leaves, moving like waves in the spring breezes. There were elms, with slim weeping tops; sturdier plumper maples; gnarled, stubby-fingered oaks; broad, leafy lindens. Occasionally a great pine pierced the horizon. A few men stood out over their comrades like those pine trees. One of these was Sam Houston.

It is interesting to speculate about the folklore a teen-age boy learned as he played and worked on the frontier. H would know how to outmock mockingbirds, to fly Juneybugs on a string, to call doodle-bugs out of their holes. He would harbor knowledge that today's city-bred boy never dreams of! Know that if a white pigeon settles on the chimney, or an owl screeches with a hoarse voice, calamity is near. That you can't catch a weasel asleep; that toads never open up their mouths in dog days.

Any friend of young Sam Houston could show you the place in the swine's forefoot where the devil came out. Boys kept a sharp eye out for ravens. King Arthur had been turned into a raven. In the spring-time he circled over the Valley. Raven once snow-white, a tattle-tale now he is black. Robin plucked a thorn from Christ's temple — now

his breast is red.

Everybody on the frontier knew how to heal. Snakeroot was fine for headache, and sass tea was a whoppin' good tonic. A spider in an old quilt, hung a round the neck, cured ague. Pokeweed leaves made good poultices for sores, and peppermint tea cured indigestion. A feller was a fool to put up with warts as long as there were jumpy toads

to conjure them away.

The disease which no Virginian knew just how to cure was the Kentucky fever. How many times young Sam stood at the edge of the Great Path, and watched the wagons move west, no one knows. What a drama was here; these landless and penniless pilgrims traveling, as Moses Austin wrote, "through ice and snow, passing large rivers without show or stocking, and barely as many raggs as covers their nakedness." For a boy, it must have been an awe-inspiring sight.

The human race is tough. The people who passed by Timber Ridge

<sup>\*</sup> Liberty Hall Academy was moved closer to Lexington in 1780. Because George Wasington presented the school with valuable canal stock, the name was changed to Washington Academy in 1798, and Washington College in 1813. Later on, to honor its first post-Civil War president, The board changed the name to Washington and Lee University.

not only reached Kentucky; they conquered it. Back in the mother country, a Scottish writer observed the doings of his immigrant countrymen and gave them his blessing. His name was Thomas Carlyle.

"How beautiful to think of lean tough settlers, tough as guttapercha, with most occult unsubduable fire in their belly, steering over the western mountains to annihilate the jungle and bring bacon to the posterity of Adam," Carlyle wrote. "There is no myth of Athena or Heracles equal to this FACT."

Eventually the Kentucky that was long a Virginia county would become a state, famous for its whisky, horses, maple sugar, and pretty

girls. A folk ditty would comment on each commodity:

The first is strong, the second is fleet, The third and four are exceeding sweet And all uncommonly hard to beat!

If Sam Houston's life after 1807 proves anything, it is that he was uncommonly hard to beat. Joining the army, he won renown by leading the final charge at Horseshoe Bend that enabled Andrew Jackson to smash the power of the Creeks. While scaling a stockade Houston received an arrow in his thigh. A companion tried to dislodge it, but failed twice. "If you don't do it this time, I'll kill you!" Houston cried. The arrow came back and Sam continued the fight.

He never doubted his destiny. Once, as he paced the deck of a river packet, an eagle swooped down near his head, screeched wildly ,and bolted towards the setting sun. Sam though it was an omen. Maybe he

was right.

Whatever we think of his life and mission, we know that it sprang from the soil and ethos of Timber Ridge, Virginia. The sapling grew into a magnificent American oak tree; the stars were auspicious.

Timber Ridge to Houston, Texas. What a trip that must have been in frontier days. A man would have to have a right good start to make it.

#### MINUTES OF JANUARY 30, 1956 MEETING

Following a sumptuous feast, President William Couper wielded the gavel for the first time with heartening results and called the Society to

order at 7:40 P. M., in the Robert E. Lee Hotel dining room.

Many visitors were present, some behind columns; so none were introduced. The Vice-Presidents were introduced, but remained silent. The treasurer, Miss Lula Dunlap gave a good piece of news; namely that we now have \$1,481.16 in the Treasury. Dr. Turner then urged our participation in Heritage Week, during which time the townspeople will be acquainted with town history and visitors will (on occasions) be carted out of town on buses. More details on this were promised.

The following committee chairmen were called on:

Membership: Mrs. P. L. Paxton-(introduced Capt. and Mrs. Daniel Osburg, & Mrs. Edith Richardson; noted death of Dr. Howe).

Ways and Means: Bruce Morrison.

Historical Records: Dr. Cole Davis-(having been just appointed, has found nothing yet).

Program: Mrs. H. L. Eichelberger. Biography: Col. George Brooke. Genealogy: Miss Ellen Anderson—(2 letters). Historical Markers: Earl Paxton.

Reception: Mrs. Rosa Tucker Mason and Mrs. R. L. Owen.

Col. Couper lauded Mrs. McCulloch's essay contest, and also Mrs. Eichelberger's and Dr. Turner's ability to move all things, including Mary Moore's cradle.

"The Franklin Society, 1800-1891" was the title of Dr. Turner's learned and interesting paper. He paid homage to Mr. Harrington Waddell, largely responsible for preserving the papers and records from which this and other accounts have been done. He also mentioned several other people who have done essays on the Society, including Garland Gray of Gray Commission fame, and Matthew Paxton, publisher and citizen extraordin-

The Franklin Society was one of more than 40 which sprang up along the Atlantic about 1800, to meet a need for general enlightenment and to carry intellectual interest westward. It was a Democratic-Republican society with wide membership, which was so eager to stir up sleepy minds that it fined members 12½c for being absent and even more for coming and not participating. The public debates in weekly meetings, held at candle time, kept alive the flame of learning along the Wilderness Road.

Dr. Turner listed the early members, the policies, and many questions debated by the group. The details cannot be listed here, but B. F. Harlow has promised to publish it verbatim in the LEXINGTON GAZETTE,

and copies will be deposited in our files.

After the formal conclusion of the meeting, Mr. Jay Johns who has been so instrumental in keeping alive the memory of General "Stonewall" Jackson, played a record of a recent Jackson speech. In good spirits, the society's members carried glowing memories into the cold night.

#### MINUTES OF APRIL 30, 1956 MEETING

The Rockbridge Historical Society was called to order at 8:05 P.M. at the "Castle" by the President Colonel William Couper.

The secretary, Dr. M. W. Fishwick, being absent, the minutes of the

January 30th, meeting were read by Dr. Cole Davis.

Spring having at last arrived after a cold April, Col. Couper read two

verses celebrating the event.

In the absence of Mrs. P. L. Paxton, Membership Chairman, Mr. Oakes presented two new members, Mrs. Carl Cox and Mr. R. B. Weaver. Tribute was paid to our beloved member Mrs. Livingston Waddell Smith.

Colonel Couper substituting for Librarian Turner, showed a fine Miley picture presented by Miss Howe. A picture of Dr. John Graham was presented by Mrs. Lee. Two papers written by Mr. Randolph Preston were presented by him. Dr. Tompkins' scrap books were presented by Mrs. Tompkins. A rare volume "Our Women in War Time" was given by Mrs. H. L. Cathey and "The Knights of the Golden Horseshoe" was given by Mrs. Campbell.

Mr. Earl Paxton, Chairman of Markers Committee said he knew of no markers that had been put up by the Society. He gave a short and interesting talk on Big Foot Wallace whose marker was erected by "admirers." He showed a copy of "State Historical Markers of Virginia" which is published by the Virginia Conservation and Development Commission and

can be had for the asking.

Mr. Houston Barclay showed a "Business Directory" of Lexington dated 1896 which hung in Hugh Williams' Barber Shop during the sixty years he cut hair of our oldest members. It was presented to the Historical Society by Mrs. Williams and is a treasured reminder of one of

our finest citizens.

At 8:34 Mrs. Eichelberger introduced Mr. Bruce E. Patterson who had written a very interesting paper on the tin mines of Cornwall but did not read it. Mr. Earl Paxton read the paper much of which was from Hardesty's "Historical and Geographical Encyclopedia of Rockbridge County," a very rare book which would be a great addition to our library. There was great excitement in the early 1880's when the mine was thought to be mostly silver. William Hooker Hulbert, who had prospected all over

the far Western states for twenty years, came to Cornwall in 1883 and found it to be only a tin mine. Mr. Patterson gave an amusing description of the hauling of a nine ton bandwheel, eighteen feet in diameter on a specially built wagon drawn by twelve yoke of oxen.

Mr. Patterson said:

Anything written about the tin mines of Irish Creek would not be as interesting as the biography of the man and his family who first dis-

covered that the ore was tin instead of silver.

William Hooker Hulbert was born in Kingston, Luzerne County, Pennsylvania, May 28, 1812, a son of Napthali and Olive (Smith) Hurlbert. His parents were natives of Connecticut, his father born in Groton, and his mother in New London. Both died in Burns, N. Y., the father aged 74 and the mother at the age of 68. At Arkport, New York, June 26th, 1839 William H. Hurlbert married Mary Ann, daughter of Johnson and Susanna (Bisset) Carey. She was born in Arkport, which is a town of Steuben County, New York, June 22nd, 1813 and her parents died in Arkport, her father in September 1862 and her mother on the 13th of October 1863. They were natives of Pennsylvania, her father born March 5th, 1783, and her mother born October 14th, 1783. The birth and death record of the children of Mr. and Mrs. Hulbert is: Arthur Carey, born September 14th, 1840, died August 4th, 1842; Mary Francis born January 29th, 1845, died February 3rd, following; William Johnson, born August 1st, 1846; Clarence Avery, born December 30th, 1850, died Novem-

ber 16th, 1880.

Mr. Hulbert moved in 1844 to Illinois, and for several years engaged in merchandising at Perry. About 1855 he attended land sales in Missouri and purchased land in Caldwell County, removing there soon after. During the Pikes Peak excitement he joined a company from this County, and crossed the plains in 1859 to seek a fortune in the gold fields of the Bocky Mountains his family returning to New York. After two years

ty, and crossed the plains in 1859 to seek a fortune in the gold fields of the Rocky Mountains, his family returning to New York. After two years of privation, toil and thrilling adventure he returned to the States with a handsome competence and made his residence in Chicago, Illinois, then at Elgin, same state. From these places he made several trips to the Rockies, exploring and prospecting from Idaho to New Mexico. On his last trip, coming down the Missouri from Fort Benton in an open boat he was made a prisoner by a party of Sioux, but subsequently ecsaped with the loss of his personal property and gold dust, reaching Fort Randall after a tramp of 200 miles. He again engaged in merchandising in Caldwell County, Missouri, at Mirabile and there made the acquaintance of William Bowman, whose father had been a resident of Rockbridge County, Virginia. By the repeated solicitations of this gentleman he was induced in November, 1873, to come to Rockbridge County to examine into the "traditional" belief that there was silver in the Blue Ridge, Rockbridge County. A few days after their arrival, Mr. Hulbert found a specimen of ore which was subsequently ascertained to be tin ore. He returned to Missouri, but in the following year came back to Rockbridge

During the summer of 1874 the veins of tin ore were opened which are now known as the Cash mines. Discouraged by capitalists and ridiculed by scientists, the development of the mineral resources of the County flagged until after the completion of the Shenandoah division of the

County, purchased his present estate on Irish Creek and settled there.

Norfolk and Western Railroad, in 1883.

Mr. Hulbert spent his remaining years in Rockbridge prospecting the Blue Ridge. He was a man of mystery to the natives as he always paid in gold, it was thought he had discovered a gold mine and minted his money.

"Taken from Hardesty's Historical & Geographical Encyclopedia of

Rockbridge County"

The existence of tin ore on Irish Creek, was known for a long time prior to the first prospecting in 1883, when active operations were begun. The tin ore from this locality was first tested by Professor Armstrong of

Washington College, Lexington, Virginia in 1846; he claimed that the specimen contained both tin and silver. Only two openings had been made prior to 1883. Since that time prospecting for tin ore has been reported along the eastern edge of Rockbridge County, extending parallel to the Blue Ridge, from a few miles north of the James River into Nelson County. Thus far the most favorable portion of the region in which tin has been found is that known as the Irish Creek area, located in the northeastern corner of Rockbridge County in the crystalline rocks of the Blue Ridge about 12 miles from Cornwall, a station on the Shenan-doah division of the Norfolk & Western Railway, and at an average elevation of about 2,800 feet. A company known as the Virginia Tin Mining & Manufacturing Company was organized in 1883 for the purpose of working the tin deposits along the headwaters of Irish Creek. The work of sinking a shaft commenced in November, 1884.

Operations stopped in the Irish Creek area as early as 1886, owing to the tin lands becoming involved in litigation. In 1889, a party of Boston capitalists obtained control of the Cash mines and in 1890 they began operations by erecting a small concentrating plant, a mill, a set of jigs and a vanner. At the close of 1891 the mill, which cost \$50,000.00 was ready. At the same time the development work put about 290 tons of rock, averaging 3.3 per cent of metallic tin, on the dumps. About 240 pounds of the black tin concentrates were shipped to Boston to be smelted. These are reported to have averaged only 43 per cent of metallic tin. About 3,000 pounds of ore was sent to England as a trial lot. The purchaser reported a considerable yield of metallic tin. A Mr. Massie selected the ore for this shipment. The property again became involved in litigation and operations were again suspended and the mine has not been operated since.

The geological and mineralogical conditions of the Irish Creek tin bearing region are similar to, if not even identical with those of the Cornwall, England mines. The following Geoogists assayed the tin ore on Irish Creek.

Professor Armstrong of Washington College, Lexington, in 1846. Professor Winslow.

Professor McCreath.

Profesor Henry D. Campbell in 1883.

Professor Massie in 1885. Major Hotchkiss in 1885.

Mr. Cabell Whitehead in 1885.

Dr. Frank W. Traphagen, analytical and consulting chemist of the Staunton Male Academy.
Professor M. B. Hardin at Virginia Military Institute.

Dr. Dabney of North Carolina.

All found about the same amount or per cent of tin in the ore. The above sketch of the Irish Creek tin mines is from Thomas Leonard Watson's book on Mineral Resources of Virginia, 1907.

Transporting the heavy equipment from Cornwall to the mines was quite a problem at that time as it had to be hauled on wagons, the road was narrow and crooked, and had to be widened, and a special wagon had to be built to support some of the heavy machinery, which was built by the Buen. Vista Wagon Works, the heaviest piece of machinery being the bandwheel. It was 18 feet in diameter, the face was 32½ inches broad, and was mounted on a shaft 12 inches in diameter, and the wheel weighed approximately 9 tons. They hired twelve yoke of oxen from lumbermen and farmers of Amherst, Nelson and Rockbridge County to pull the wagon and it took several days to make the trip. Old timers have told me it was quite an occasion and spectators came from far and near to see them start. Each yoke of oxen had a driver and they were all urging their teams to pull, some of the oxen balked and refused to pull, others laid down and it was said there never was heard such swearing and hollering before they got their teams straightened out and to pull.

The Fitzgerald Lumber Company of Fairfield, Virginia, purchased the tin mine property in 1953, and sold the equipment to Edward Janney of Buena Vista, Virginia, who dismantled the buildings and sold the machinery for junk. The only building left was the mine superintendent's

home.

Old Cornwall and vicinity has quite a history, which should be interesting to Rockbridge people. It was located on the west side of South River on land owned in 1778, by Archibald Alexander, first sheriff of Rockbridge County. Just one mile northwest at the home of Samuel Wallace on April 7, 1778, Rockbridge County was organized and the first county court was held. John Parks had a furnace on the Irish Creek farm and he and the McClure Brothers at the mouth of South River and William Moore's furnace on Steeles Run and at the mouth of Marys Creek furnished iron and cannon balls for the continental army. Also equipment for the Cherokee expedition. The following is from the original receipt among the papers of the late C. F. Jordan of Buena Vista, Virginia, which he allowed me to copy:

Camp Long Island

September 20 ,1776.

Recd of James Gilmore One Thousand and sixty Potmettle Kettles Madison Chist 1500 Flints for the rest of the Expedition against the Cherokees.

Commanded by

Col. William Christian John Bowman

The above is an exact copy of the receipt.

James Gilmore, on April 8th, 1778 was appointed road surveyor from

Buffalo Creek to his own house.

One of the furnaces on South River furnished this equipment. Avery & Bradley, who had a foundry on the Irish Creek farm, cast the first water pipes for Lexington. This foundry was washed away by the flood of July 13th, 1842, and was rebuilt by Bradley and Lyle on Steeles Run between Steeles Tavern and Vesuvius and now owned by the descendants of William S. Humphries who purchased it about 1866.

Samuel Downey, who composed the song "Old Joe Clark, Goodby Betsy Brown," was living in the old Irish Creek home in 1870. This was a large log house and it is now torn down and the following families lived in it: John McCown bought it in 1815. Samuel D. Paxton was the next owner. It is not known who built it. One mile south of Cornwall is the entrance to White Gap Valley. One of the first across the Blue Ridge traversed this valley. Whites Ordinary was located about ½ mile from the entrance. It was a brick building now torn down. The Sheltmans and Davis homes were in this valley, and Samuel Decker's flour mill was located at the entrance on South River. Reid Alexander's Mill in 1841 was on the Irish Creek farm.

In early days Cornwall was a crossroads, as you passed it going from Lexington up Irish Creek to Montebello and Coffey Town across the Blue Ridge to Orinoco and Amherst Court House, or from Vesuvius to the mouth of South River where the iron was loaded on batteaus to be floated down Maury and James Rivers at high water to Richmond. At other

times it was wagoned by Vesuvius and Steeles Tavern to the Howardsville Pike and on to Warminister and Howardsville on the James River and by water on to Richmond.

In 1882 when the Shenandoah Valley Railroad was built there was a store located at Old Cornwall operated by W. T. Moore of Fairfield and Robert Crowder, a lawyer. When the Railroad put in a siding they secured a Post Office and a flag stop for trains and named the place "Crowder". Afterwards when the boom started and the tin mines were operating, the name was changed to Cornwall, after the tin mining center of Cornwall, England. It came to be quite a business center and at one time there were three stores located there. The following merchants had stores there at times: Moore & Crowder, Wilmer & Sutton, E. T. Shewey and Decker Brothers. Cornwall was an outlet for tanbark, cross ties, lumber, huckleberrys and chestnuts. Josiah Wilmer was the last merchant at Cornwall, when the South River Lumber Company located their band mill one mile south, Mr. Wilmer moved his store and Post Office to the new location which is now Cornwall.

The Cornwall boom was late getting started. About 1890, Gurnee and Sheffey of New York, with headquarters in Lynchburg, Virginia, owned the Irish Creek farm. John Whitmore was farming for them. Mr. Moon was in charge of the company in the promotion of the city-to-be.

On a plateau in the forks of Irish creek and South River, overlooking the bottom lands of the two streams, they erected at that time a modern hotel, three stories high with a cupola on top. The Hotel consisted of forty eight rooms, Water was supplied from a spring on Irish Creek by a rife ram to three wooden tanks located on the third floor, the ballroom, lobby, offices, dining room and kitchen were located on the first floor. It was heated by fireplaces and stoves. It was a beautiful building with a wonderful view, the grounds were landscaped and the native trees were left for shade. The building was the same style of architecture as the Buena Vista Hotel, now Southern Seminary.

Th City was laid out in lots and streets, as none of the lots were ever sold the streets were not graded. The hotel was finished early in 1892 during the start of the great depression and the tin mines having to close down, it was never opened and never had a guest. It was unoccupied for several years. One Sunday my father took me with him to salt the colts he had in pasture on the farm and we found them in the ballroom, as it was July or August it was cool in there. Afterwards Mr. J. E. Layne occupied it as caretaker and would let the neighborhood young folks use the ballroom for their dances.

About 1907 it was sold to T. T. Dickinson & Son of Buena Vista and was dismantled and part of the material was used to rebuild the Brick Yard at Buena Vista, which had burned a short time before.

The following song was composed by Henry Floyd about the boom:

This old creek farm has been looked around Some think it is a pity But Mr. Moon now very soon Will turn it into a city.

Frank Leslie's Illustrated Newspaper of July 5, 1890, had this to say of the Boom Cities of the Valley. "The Climate of the Virginias is one of their greatest charms. The spring and autumn seasons are what poets and artists dream of, while the summer is fresh with the breeze from mountain tops and never enervating. They possess mineral and manufacturing resources equal to those of Birmingham, with the water power of Lowell, the healthful and delightful climate of Asheville, the accessibility of Chattanooga, the natural beauties and attractions of scenery and location unsurpassed anywhere."

#### MINUTES OF JULY 23, 1956 MEETING

The old Hamilton Schoolhouse, near Rapp's Mill, was the meeting place of the Rockbridge Historical Society. The meeting began at 4:30 p.m. At 6:15 supper was served by the ladies of the Buffalo Community League

This old schoolhouse, established long before the days of public schools, is the only one left now—it has served as a chapel; for political meetings; and for other useful gatherings. It has recently been restored and will be further restored.

Dr. George W. Diehl told its history which follows:

#### "THE SAGA OF AN OLD FIELD SCHOOL"

Of all noted families of Scotland there is none that may lay claim to higher distinction more justly than the Hamiltons. From the day of Walter FitzGilbert, whose name appears on the Homage Roll, 1296, as being of "Hameldone," down through the course of Scottish, English, Irish, and American history the name Hamilton has been borne by men

and women worthy of the high traditions set by their sires.

One of the several branches of the clan to come to the headwaters of the James River was that of James Hamilton. He and his wife Margaret, with their infant son James, Jr., migrated from County Tyrone, Ireland, and came to the Valley of Virginia where their second son, named Robert, was born on Sept. 5, 1780. The family made their home on the South Fork of Buffalo Creek, a branch of James River, where on March 18, 1782, Hamilton bought 118 acres of land and was able to patent 128 acres more on the following Sept. 24th. Two years later he bought fifty-six acres more, adjacent to the other two tracts, from Thomas and Ann Howell. These 302 acres were later expanded until Hamilton was one of the largest land-owners of the section.

The little Hamilton family moved into the two-story log cabin which Howell had erected the previous year—the date was etched upon a stone of the chimney, 1783. The interests of James Hamilton were those of the early planter of the valley. A water mill for the grinding of grist, was operated by water brought in a flume across the meadows and fields where tobacco was grown. The log tobacco houses, standing not far from the house, were filled annually with fine tobacco which, when cured, was packed in home-coopered hogsheads and hauled across the Blue Ridge to markets on the lower James. To aid in the farm duties, Hamilton owned a number of husky slaves. The slave quarters, erected in the rear of the home, are gone, the last one being destroyed in recent years, and the only evidence of black bondsmen to remain is the old cemetery where the graves are marked by fieldstones. The efficiency of the farm was further enhanced by the operation of a still, which was housed in a building near the grist-mill in order to facilitate the handling of grain used in distilling liquor.

On Oct. 23, 1805, James Hamilton, Sr., died and was buried in Oxford Church cemetery, about four or five miles down the Buffalo Valley. His son, James Jr., had married Margaret Robinson, daughter of John Robinson of the Natural Bridge community, the previous year and the young couple were given the "Gadsberry Plantation" of 238 acres, a negro slave girl named Phoebe, a boy horse called Pomp, "four head of cow beasts," six sheep, eleven hogs, and the farming "utensils" which are now in his possession and use. This land was the southern portion of the Hamilton home-place, recently the home of the late Miss Vada Allison. To the widow Margaret went one-half of the rest of his real estate and personal property for her use during her lifetime; the other one was devised to Robert, the younger son, who was to get his mother's interest

upon her death.

For more than two years to Robert and his mother fell the task of operating the plantation. The former, now twenty-eight years old, gave his diligent oversight and constant efforts to the demanding duties of a planter and the place prospered greatly. But, on Oct. 28, 1807, Margaret Owen Hamilton died and was buried by her husband in the old church cemetery. Robert Hamilton was now "lord of the manor" and he handled his responsibility with great vigor.

On March 8, 1808, young Hamilton married Sarah ("Sally") Letcher, the daughter of John Letcher and his wife, the former Mary Houston. Her paternal grandparents were Giles Letcher and Hannah Hughes, his wife; those on her mother's side were Robert Houston and his wife, Margaret Davidson. So, Mrs. Hamilton was a cousin of Gen. Sam Houston, of Texas fame, and the Rev. Samuel Houston, noted divine and educator. The Rev. Daniel Blain, at this time the pastor of Timber Ridge and Oxford Presbyterian Churches, officiated.

The first born of Robert and Sally Hamilton was named Narcissa Bertonia; she was born Dec. 18, 1808. A woman of a brilliant mind, she became one of the most foremost women in the field of education in Virginia. She was proud of her family lines and passed the history and traditions on to her young kindred. One of the prized memories of her childhood was the recollection of her kinsman, the Rev. Samuel Houston, who told her the origin of the family name.

The early people of Scotland had a culture similar to that of the American Indian and were known by certain characteristics. Some lived near a haw tree and were known as the Haws. When they advanced to Haw. When they advanced to the field of mechanical arts, they erected a mill and the name became Haw-mill. Because a village grew up around the mill and such a community was known as a "ton", those dwelling in the village now became known as Haw-mill-tons, or Hamilton.

The second child of Robert Hamilton was Mary Houston, born May

27, 1811. She became the wife of Charles Bobb, Oct. 14, 1837, and died in 1853 — she was buried in Oxford Church cemetery. John Letcher Hamilton, the third child, was born on June 7, 1813; on Dec. 13, 1843, he married Mary Ann Hancock. While still a youth, he led a company of mounted men in the Mormon War and, upon the outbreak of the Mexican War, he went to Santa Fe and recruited a cavalry unit which he offered to Gen. Sterling Price who was then colonel of the 2nd Missouri Infantry. President Polk commissioned young Hamilton as a captain and assigned him to service under Price. When the war was over, he was held in the army for eighteen months more, to serve against

the Indians. He died at his home in Greene County, Mo., Feb. 15, 1890. Owen William Hamilton, the fourth child, died in his teens and is buried at Oxford. The fifth child, Cynthia Ann, born April 23, 1818, became the wife of Dr. Robert Marshall on Sept. 30, 1835. Isaac Montgomery, born April 9, 1820, was the sixth child. He was a valiant soldier of the Confederacy, serving under Gen. Braxton Bragg. The youngest child of Robert Hamilton was named James Forgison; he was born on April 29, 1822. He married Susan A. Clarkson, daughter of John Clarkson, widely known as "Old Bolivar", a name given to the product of his excellent still. Dr. George Junkin, president of Washington College, performed the rites on Oct. 6, 1851. Six years later Hamilton died during an epidemic of fever and was buried at Oxford. His widow married John M. P. Paterson and lived on the farm bequeathed to her by her father; it lies at the confluence of Spring Valley and Buffalo creeks and is the present home of Mr. and Mrs. Jennings Tardy.

Thus the family of Robert Hamilton increased and waned — his wife had died on Jan. 24, 1828, two of his children were buried by her side, and the others of the family circle had gone West to new lands and fortune. For his companions, he had his son Isaac Montgomery and his daughter-in-law, Susan. After much deliberation, Robert Hamilton, now more than 67 years of age and in debilitated health, sold his estate to John Clarkson, Feb. 5, 1858, and spent the rest of the winter and early Spring in preparations for his long trip to Missouri. There he spent the rest of his life, dying at Washington, Mo., Nov. 7, 1859; he is buried in the Presbyterian cemetery of that place.

In 1787, a tide of evangelism broke on the red hills of Prince Edward County, Virginia, in the vicinity of Hampden-Sydney College; it was directed to Rockbridge County by the Rev. William Graham, furthered by Dr. G. A. Baxter, and strengthened by the Rev. Archibald Alexander. This religious awakening came to Oxford Church whose members were known to be "ardent and zealous, and fond of warm, pungent preaching." So, a sense of deeper spiritual values was brought into the thinking of the people, resulting in many reconsecrations and a re-

vitalized religion.

In the summer of 1816, the Rev. Andrew Baker Davidson, a dynamic evangelist, became pastor of Oxford Church succeeding the Rev. Daniel Blain who had died two years before. Inspired by the new surge of the religious and the vision it presented, Robert Hamilton desired to make a definite contribution to the cause of Christ. He discussed it with his wife and found her in agreement with him that something ought to be done to express their gratitude to God for His blessings to them personally. Then, they conferred with their pastor and perhaps it was his idea that a place of worship for the people of the valley ought to be erected near the Hamilton home. From this place it was about five miles down the valley to Oxford and about the same distance up the valley to the Methodist meeting-house at Rapp's Mill, as the community came to be known later.

The matter was pondered around the Hamilton fireside for some time—then came the answer! The Hamilton family was growing steadily and the Hamilton tradition of education was strong, as evidenced by the well-thumbed pages of the books brought from Ireland which were on the shelf near the fireplace. Little Narcissa Bertonia was entering her teens, Mary Houston was now about eleven, John Letcher was nine, and Owen William was seven. Consequently, to the idea of erecting a church house was added the concept of the building being used as a school. It struck fire, and on Feb. 3, 1823, the Hamiltons deeded an acre of ground, more or less, to William Murphy and William Henderson, as trustees; it was a small meadow in the bend of the creek near the boundary line between the Hamilton land and "Gadsberry's Plantation."

It was stated in the deed, as the expressed desire of the donors, that "a house of publick worship is to be built and for the use of a school when not occupied by religious worship. This house, when built, is to be free for all preachers of the gospel, the oldest appointment to hold the

preference."

Tradition has it that William H. Letcher, Mrs. Hamilton's brother, made his home with his sister while he constructed the building. He was considered quite a successful builder and has erected several buildings in Lexington. The logs came from adjacent woodland of the donor and the nearby creek was the source of the sand and water used in making the mortar to close the chinks between the logs. The floor was of puncheon and the roof was made of hewn chestnut shingles. At the east end of the room, under a gable-window, was a raised platform adorned by a homemade pulpit which became the desk of the teacher when school was in session. Along the walls on either side were wide boards supported by strong hickory pegs in the wall—these were the common desks of the pupils. The seating was backless benches, crudely but substantially made and used by pupils and worshippers alike.

As the use of the building was more extensive as a school than as a church, it bacame known as "Hamilton's School House." But here many

ministers have proclaimed the gospel from the plain, home-made pulpit, but all the names have not been recorded. Many of them were itinerants of the Methodist and Baptist denominations, some were men of culture and education, some were unletered and plain. Here, under the leadership of one of the teachers, Rev. Emett T. Mason, the Buffalo Baptist Church was brought into being; it flourished a few years and then, due to internal conflict, it passed into history. Here the aged Rev. Samuel Houston preached in his late years. Here, too, a young man, recently 'set apart unto the Gospel ministry,' preached one of his virgin sermons and, after he had achieved world acclaim, he was back on South Buffalo and preached again at "Hamilton's"—he was Bishop William Taylor.

But, as a school house, "Hamilton's" was more widely known. In 1810, the Virginia Legislature had set up the famed "Literary Fund" supplying the finances by the allocation of escheats, forfeitures, and "all rights accruing to the State as derelict." The money so accumulated, it was ordered, should be used in aiding poor children, those whose parents or guardians were unable to pay the cost of an education without great inconvenience. The commissioners of the militia districts placed the funds in action, paying the teachers upon presentation of their account. It was not until Oct. 31, 1842, that school districts were formed

and designated as such.

John Steele Leech was commissioner of District No. 4 in which Hamilton School House was located, and, in February, 1838, he ordered James Johnston to be paid for his teaching in the last quarter of 1837. The schoolmaster had reported that he had 16 "poor children" enrolled and that he was due \$21.20 for the total of 530 days they had been in attendance—this was at the set fee allowed, 4c per day per pupil. This does not mean that only "poor children" were taught by Johnston for undoubtedly he had "pay pupils," children from homes that could pay the tuition fee he charged for his services.

Hamilton's School House was an "old field school," one of those early educational plants erected by the cooperative efforts of the people in an abandoned field, on land donated for that purpose, or on land not desirable for farming because of untilable terrain. Such were completely under the control of the community. Too, there were no such things as standards of qualification or licenses for teachers, the community deter-

mining the fitness of the teacher, educationally and morally.

Men and women of high mental acumen and positive character taught at "Hamilton's" during the years of its service. Some were the products of the community, such as James Johnston, Narcissa Bertonia Hamilton, Jane E. Johnston, Charles Todd, and Seaton B. Rowsey, just to mention a few. Some were from a distance—Joel F. Cooley, E. T. Mason, and J. Baxter McCorkle. James T. Miller, remembered for his fine work in photography, had the longest tenure of position—he taught school here

from 1874 to 1891.

The matter of trusteeship of the property had been overlooked in the passing of the years. Trustees were necessary for, although the building was used as a public school, it never became the property of the County Board of Education. The two original trustees were long dead and their successors had not been appointed. So, on Sept. 8, 1900, W. B. F. Leech, J. Montgomery Johnston, and James T. Miller were appointed by the Court to form the Board. Trustees were again necessary and, upon the Buffalo Community League's recommendation, made on April 7, 1955, Charles S. Saville, Jacob O. Saville, and J. Coleman Hall were constituted the present Board.

In the Rockbridge County News, Nov. 3, 1928, there appeared notice that Hamilton's School was to be closed and pupils who would normally attend it were to be transported to Palmer School, some four miles

down the valley. The effort had been made, in view of the lack of pupils, to consolidate Rapp's Mill and Hamilton's Schools, but it was impossible to find a suitable site. Says the article, "Hamilton's is probably one of the oldest in Rockbridge, for many of the old schools have disappeared with the progress of time and change." Mrs. J. Granville Johnston, who had done all her elementary grade work in Hamilton's School House, was the last school teacher to serve here.

Through the years, Hamilton's School House was a community center and more. The activity of the people found this spot its throbbing heart. It was a place of worship, but not a sanctuary as a formal church. It was a school, but not an institution with restricted area of service. Here the rich and poor, the ignorant in letters and the wise in books, the humble

and the proud — all found the desires of their hearts.

Almost from the beginning, the grounds around the log structure were used as a burial-ground for the "free" negroes, manumitted slaves and their children. No markers at the graves were set up and none of them can be located save one, that of the last interment which was made about 1900. But the school ground was a place of the "quick" as well as the "dead". In antebellum days, Capt. John F. Wilson drilled his militiamen, Company H, 8th Regiment, with the aid of his capable lieutenant, Richard G. Manspile, upon this yard.

In the fall of 1862, M. L. Bobbitt came as a teacher to "Hamilton's" with the distinction of being incapacited for further military service by battle-wounds. Knowing that the larger boys would soon or late be called to the defense of Virginia and Southern Rights, he acted as drill-master during the recess periods. Wooden guns, patiently whittled from a pine or cedar board, or a straight stick provided ample means for instruction in the manual of arms and the school ground was ample for drilling in formation. Several of the boys saw military service be-

fore Appomattox closed their career for soldiers.

Finally, the old schoolhouse was a great political center for upper South and North Buffalo creeks in the days when factional fireworks marked the tension of political rallies. Many a fiery oratorical outburst lauded "Tippecanoe and Tyler, Too" during the heat of that campaign. John Steele Leech and Capt. James Montgomery made an effective team ably supported by Robert Hamilton. At the political rallies, held in the school-house, coon-skin hats were much in evidence and were worn as a badge of support. Robert Hamilton wore his headpiece of fur with great pride and continued to make his appearance at subsequent political meetings and elections with this symbol of his political faith. To emphasize his convictions further, at the presidential election when Harrison was chosen, he carried a pole on the top of which he perched a stuffed raccoon.

About this time, some of the larger boys of the school killed a large raccoon which they found prowling along the creek and the skin was stretched on the outer wall of the log school house. This grisly token and the presence of so many coon-skin hats caused Hamilton, with his name-giving proclivity, to dub the log building "Coon-skin College".

The plain plank door, as well as the outer walls on either side of it, became the community bulletin-board. Here the sheriff posted the official court orders for public notice and many a passer-by would rein in his horse to read the latest pronouncement. When the notice of the Conscription Act of 1862 was tacked to the door — Virginia summonsing her sons to rally under the banner of the Confederacy — one elevenyear old lad boasted to his companions that his older brother Sam would not be conscripted for he was already a veteran of Wise's Legion in the campaign in the mountains of western Virginia. Some who read it hastened to Lexington to enlist, some tarried for the summons, but others sought security in the mountain recesses to evade the dreaded service.

In conclusion, after the close of school in the Spring of 1928 and until the Spring of 1955, the ravages of time and the hands of despoilers played havoc with the old building; for twenty-seven years it stood isolated, deserted, and lone. It was then that the Buffalo Community League began its work of restoration, planning to maintain it as an example of the pioneer school house and church and as a memorial to those who had studied and worshipped there through the years. Basically, it will be considered, as of old, a place of education and spiritual uplift. As the forefathers of the community had sought to bring the light of truth to the mind and heart of childhood, providing at the same time for their adult needs in the same field, so shall its service be in the community of today and the future. Since it is the oldest 'old field school' still in active service, there is the hope that means will be found to make its preservation a certainty.

#### MINUTES OF OCTOBER 22, 1956 MEETING

The meeting year was called to order at 8 P.M. on Monday evening in "The Castle".

Col. William Couper, President, was in the chair. Because of the heavy politicating in the County this evening, the attendance was comparatively light.

Minutes of the April and July meetings were read and approved. Dr. Charles Turner, reporting as Librarian, told of acquiring the following items: old hymn books from Singer's Glen (donated by Mrs. H. M. Quisenberry); the Houston Bible and 13 volumes of History (by Leslie Campbell); a picture of the Waddell family (by Miss Katie Campbell); four mss. diaries of Mr. Edward Robinson by his daughter, Mrs. Douglas S. Higgins; a copy of CHESSIE'S ROAD, by the author.

There was a discussion of display cases which are badly needed. The store-bought ones are so expensive that it was decided to try the home-

made variety.

Mrs. Eichelberger introduced the speaker of the evening, Dr. Harry Semones of Roanoke, Va. His topic was "The Rockbridge Background of Dr. Andrew Taylor Still, founder of Osteopathy."

Dr. Semones sketched the early history of the upper Shenandoah Valley, from the early eighteenth century forward. He told of how John Walker and James Moore came to Rockbridge County, Va., and settled near Jump Mountain. Among their descendents were the Moores of Virginia and Kentucky.

James Monroe III had 3 children. One of these (Mary Poage Moore) married the Rev. Abraham Still, and from this union was born Andrew

T. Still, Father of Osteopathy.

For a while the couple lived nine miles south of Lexington near Fancy Hill. Eventually they moved to Abb's Valley, after which time Andrew was born in 1828. "Not only Lee and Tazewell ,but Rockbridge County, shares in family honor," Dr. Semones said.

Osteopathy was founded in 1874. The principle notion, according to

our guest, was that structural abnormalities can cause functional disturbances in the body. Today, there are 6 osteopathic colleges training 1,700 students. The state of Virginia has erected a highway marker honoring the memory of Andrew Still, who died in Missouri in 1917.

Thus, while some of its members dwelt on the body medical, other

members of the Rockbridge Historical Society were off dealing with the body politic. In both places there was talk of the troubles of the American republic; but as to what remedy would be prescribed by the voters, only the November polling can tell.

Dr. Harry Semones said: Virginia, "Mother of Presidents" and home state of many leaders in all phases of American life, is also the birthplace of a man who, in 1874, founded a new science of healing, called Osteopathy. This man was Dr. Andrew Taylor Still, who was born in an humble log cabin near Jonesville, Lee County, on August 6, 1828, and Osteopathic Physicians in Virginia and throughout the world, in 1949, celebrated the Diamond Jubilee of the founding of their profession by Dr. Still.

The Virginian whose discoveries were the basis of modern Osteopathy, was not only a pioneer physician, but also a typical son of the American frontier. His ancestors came over from England and Ireland in pre-Revolutionary days, and his great-grandfather, James Moore III, and his grandfather, James Moore IV, figured in one of the most famous of the Indian raids—it took place in Abb's Valley, located in the present Tazewell County. Not only did Lee and Tazewell Counties share in the ancestral heritage of this great American, but Augusta County, (of which they were once a part and parts of which are now called Rockbridge, Botetourt and Montgomery Counties) shares in this honor.

As the name, James Moore, appears often in this narrative it may clarify things if we list them here with an identifying symbol:

I. James Moore, of Ireland II. James Moore (1711-1791), the immigrant, who married Jane Walker. III. James Moore (ca. 1740-1786), who married Martha Poage (1742-

IV. James Moore (ca. 1770-1851), He married three times and Martha Poage Moore (1800-1888), a child of the first marriage (Barbara Taylor, (1777-1802) became the mother of Dr. Andrew Taylor Still.

We will see that Dr. Still's father had an Indian among his ancestors

and as the Indians fit in with both his father and his mother, some items about the Indians will be inserted and a brief review of the history of the upper Shenandoah Valley and western Virginia will possibly better enable one to follow the stories which I shall endeavor to relate. This must necessarily include some account of the Scotch Irish, English and Germans, as well as the conflicts between the Shawnee Indian trib which had been divided by the Cherokee Indians, who had reigned supremely in Western Virginia, northern Georgia and Alabama, South Carolina, western North Carolina and eastern Tennessee, since deSoto came in contact with them in 1540.

About the year 1732 John Lewis, whose descendants afterwards figured so conspicuously in the affairs of Virginia, settled in the Shenandoah Valley. He became acquainted with John Salling shortly after Salling returned from captivity. Lewis was so pleased with Salling's description of the upper Valley that he and John Mackey made a visit to the country under the guidance of Salling; and all three of these men determined to, and did make their homes here. There was an abundance of fertile land with no one claiming ownership to any portion of it, and Lewis and his companions were free to choose what they wished.

At the time the land was examined by these men it was in no organized county, but all land beyond the Blue Ridge and extending westward to the "utmost limits of Virginia" was included in a new county, formed

in 1734, called Orange County.

John Lewis, a native of the county of Donegal, province of Ulster, Ireland, was of pure Scotch descent, and came to this country by way of Portugal, first settling with his family in Pennsylvania. He had been forced to leave Ireland on account of killing his Irish landlord. When he moved his family to the Shenandoah Valley, he brought with him his wife and children, one of whom, Andrew, commanded the Virginians at the Battle of Point Pleasant and won distinction as a general in the Revolutionary War.

In his Annals of Augusta County, Waddell says: "Concurrently with the settlement of Lewis, or immediately afterward, a flood of immigrants poured into the country. \*\*\* It is believed that all the earliest settlers came from Pennsylvania and up the Valley of the Shenandoah. It was several years before any settlers entered the Valley from the east, and through the gaps in the Blue Ridge."

On November 1, 1738, Augusta and Frederick Counties were cut off from that part of Orange County located west of the Blue Ridge Mountains, but Augusta County was not regularly organized until 1745. On October 30, that year, Governor Gooch issued a Commission of Peace to twenty-one citizens of the County, among whom were: James Patton, John Lewis, John Buchanan, Peter Scholl, Robert Campbell, Robert Poage, Thomas Lewis, John Christian and John Anderson.

Among the early settlers in the Augusta County region were James Patton and John Buchanan, two of the men named in this Commission of Peace—they came from Ireland to the Shenandoah Valley and soon became leaders in the affairs of the vast frontier county. Buchanan was a skiller surveyor and was the son-in-law of Colonel Patton, who became the County Lieutenant and Commander of the Militia of Augusta

These pioneers are mentioned because they had important roles in pushing the frontier southwestward through the Virgina Valleys—two of which, the Clinch Valley and Abb's Valley, will be particularly mentioned.

In 1745 both of these men were named, with eighteen others, as grantees in the Woods River Grant, which pertained to 120,000 acres of virgin land. Later on Colonel Patton organized an exploring and surveyiny expedition, in addition to himself, consisting of Colonel Buchanan, Dr. Thomas Walker, James Wood and an ample number of hunters, chain carriers, cooks, etc. They had pack horses in sufficient numbers to carry provisions, ammunition and other things that were necessary for a long journey and a protracted stay in the wilderness.

The late Colonel Thomas L. Preston, a great grandson of Charles Campbell, in his "Reminiscences of an Octogenarian", thus speaks of the

four leading characters of the expedition:

"Colonel Patton was about fifty-eight years old, of a tall and commanding figure and great physical strength and vigor. He was wealthy and well educated, and well fitted for the long and arduous expedition he planned. His party was also well chosen for the same purpose. John Buchanan (his son-in-law) was a surveyor, as was also Charles Campbell, both of whom had the spirit and courage of the early pioneers, with the physical attributes of strength and power of endurance."
"Dr. Thomas Walker, born January 15, 1715, was thirty-three years

old and in the prime of manhood. He was richly endowed with every qualification for such an expedition, mentally and physically, and as

physician and surveyor, a great accession to the party."

The expedition started from Colonel Patton's home near the present city of Waynesboro, Augusta County, where he had a splendid estate of 1,398 acres, which had been a part of the historic "Beverley Manor" grant and which Patton acquired from William Beverley for the sum

of five shillings (83½ cents).

Adair, in his history, says that after the Shawnee Indian tribe became divided by the Cherokees, the Shawnees lived on the Savannah River, "till by our foolish measures they were forced to withdraw northward in defense of their freedom;" and he further says: "By our miscon. duct, we lost the Shawnee Indians, who have since proved hurtful to our Colonists in general." In 1690 they began to move from South Carolina, some of them settled in the valley of Virginia about where Winchester is located in the northern Shenandoah Valley spread out to the north into what is now Delaware and eastern Pennsylvania, and under the influence of the Moravian missionaries, they remained neutral during the first part of the French and Indian War, which meban in 1754, through their kindred in Ohio were actively engaged as allies of the French against the English.

Is it strange that every tribe of Indians that ever visited the valleys of Holston and Clinch on hunting expeditions, or had ever heard of the abundance of game that gathered here, made claim of ownership to this great natural game park? When the white men first came to this section they found not only the Cherokees and Shawnees, but even the Iroquois tribes of New York, asserting ownership of the territory.

Friendly intercourse with the Cherokee Indians had been cultivated and maintained by the Virginia Colonial Government previous to the time that the pioneer settlers began to press across New River and locate in southwest Virginia. The Loyal Company, which had obtained a grant for 800,000 acres of land, to be located west of the Alleghanies and north of the North Carolina line, had sent its explorers and surveyors into southwest Virginia. Dr. Thomas Walker, who was chief surveyor and agent for the Loyal Company, had made repeated expeditions to the Holston and Clinch Valleys, and had surveyed more than 200,000 acres of the most desirable lands of this section, located at many different points. Many boundaries had been sold by the Company, and the purchasers were rapidly settling upon them. The Cherokees were very jealous of this movement which would deprive them of their great hunting grounds and they began to show a hostile attitude toward the settlers in the Holston Valley.

The six nations (Iroquois) of New York also claimed these hunting grounds, and in fact, asserted ownership to all the Virginia territory west of the Blue Ridge Mountains, including the great Valley of Virginia. The British determined to secure by treaties accession of territory in dispute, claimed by both the Iroquois and the Cherokees. In accordance with this plan, a treaty was made at Fort Stanwix on the 6th day of November, 1768, with the confederacy of the six nations, whereby they ceded to the King of England a vast territory, including the disputed lands in Virginia. A number of boundaries in Tazewell County had been sold; among the purchasers was William Ingles, who had bought land in Burke's Garden, Abb's Valley, and on the headwaters of Clinch River from the Loyal Company. The Iroquois had claimed title to the ceded territory by right of conquest, for nearly a hundred years previous to the making of the Fort Stanwix Treaty, they had invaded the country of the southern Indians, and had conquered all the southern tribes, from the Ohio River down as far as Georgia and east of the Mississippi. This included the Cherokees, and was the reason why the Shawnees, who were a detached tribe of the Iroquois, disputed the right of the Cherokees to hunt in Clinch Valley about time the pioneer settlers began to arrive there.

After Braddock's defeat at Fort DuQuesne, depredations by the Indians increased in the Valley of Virginia, in the upper James Valley, in the Roanoke Valley, in the few settlements that had been made west of the Alleghanies, and in what is now known as southwest Virginia. The first blow that fell upon the pioneers of that region was the attack made by a band of Shawnees on the settlement at Draper's Meadows—the present site of the Virginia Polytechnic Institute, at Blacksburg. This settlement was started in 1748. Dr. John Hale, who was a descendant of Mrs. William Ingles, one of the victims of that horrible tragedy, has given a concise and authentic narrative of the incident in his book, "The Trans-Alleghany Pioneers". He thus related the story as told to him by his ancestors:

"On the 8th of July, 1755, being Sunday, and the day before Braddock's memorable defeat, near Fort DuQuesne, when there was peace and there was no suspicion of harm or danger, a party of Shawnees from beyond the Ohio, fell upon Draper's Meadows settlement and killed, wounded or captured every soul there present, as follows: Colonel James Patton, Mrs. George Draper, Casper Barrier and a child of John Draper and James Cull, wounded; Mrs. William Ingles, Mrs. John Draper, Henry Lenard, prisoners"

Mrs. Draper was taken to Chillicothe, where she was adopted into the family of an old chief; and after six years of captivity was ransomed

by her husband, John Draper, and brought back to her home on New River. But in 1765, Mr. Draper exchanged his land at Draper's Meadows for a splendid boundary west of New River in the present County of Pulaski, to which place he moved, giving it the name of Draper's Valley.

The Draper's Meadows Massacre was also an important event in connection with the history of Tazewell County, as Colonel James Patton was the central and commanding figure of this murderous assault by the Indians upon the pioneer settlers of the southwest Virginia. He was the first man to organize and bring an exploring and surveying party to the section of Virginia west of New River. This was in 1748, and as has been previously related, he then visited Burke's Garden, and in 1750 and 1753 had surveying done on the headwaters of Clinch River, and in Abb's Valley. He thus prepared the way for those who came to settle in what is now known as Tazewell County.

One may ask, by what route from the New River Valley did the early settlers reach the upper Clinch River Valley, and what is now Tazewell County? Possibly the most direct route was up Walker's Creek to the headwaters of the Bluestone River, over the divide near what is known as Tip Top, along the route of Clinch Valley of the Norfolk and Western Railway, an alternate route is further down New River to the mouth of the Bluestone River, up by what is now Bramwell, West Virginia, to Pocahontas, Virginia, into the northeast part of Tazewell County to Abb's Valley.

Dr. Still's great-great-grandfather, James Moore II, left Ireland about the year 1726, with his brother Joseph, and settled in Chester County, Pennsylvania-Joseph died in 1728, while preparing for the ministry and James married Jane Walker, a descendent of the Rutherfords of

Scotland.

John Walker and his son-in-law, James Moore II, left Pennsylvania and settled on Walker's Creek, in Rockbridge County, Virginia, near Jump Mountain. There James Moore II lived and died—his family consisted of five sons and five daughters. From them have descended Moores in Virginia and Kentucky, quite numerous; (the oldest grandson was for some time one of the teachers in Transylvania University); Paxtons, Stuarts, McPheeters, Coalters of Virginia and South Carolina.

The sixth child and second son of James Moore II, the immigrant, was born in that part of Augusta County which later became Rockbridge County about the time that George Washington was ten years of age. He married, about 1768, Martha Poage (1742-1786), a daughter of John Poage, who lived on Poage's Run about nine miles south of the present town of Lexington, at a place called Oak Bank, at Fancy Hill store, near the Valley Pike (now Route U.S. 11 and now in Rockbridge County).

For a short time after their marriage they lived at Newell's Tavern, which is on the present Route Virginia 622, just off Route U.S. 11, about half way between Natural Bridge and Buchanan-at present in Botetourt County. From this place they moved to what is now Montgomery County, where they resided for about three years.

Mary Moore, the second child of James Moore II, married Samuel

Paxton—he died—she then married Major Alexander Stuart—one child by Paxton—four by Stuart—one of whom was J. E. B. Stuart, the famous Confederate General of Civil War Fame.

During their residence in the New River County, Absalom Looney, one of their neighbors when they were younger, made a pioneer trip further west into what is now Tazewell County and brought back a glowing report of a valley which bears his name, "Abb's Valley", it is near the present site of Pocahontas, Virginia. He is alleged to have been the first white man to see this beautiful country and was a member of the family for whom Looney's Ferry was named. This Ferry carried the early settlers over the James River, down the wilderness trail from the Valley of Virginia into western Virginia, eastern Tennessee and Kentucky.

James Moore III acquired land in Abb's Valley and moved there just before the Declaration of Independence. At the beginning of the Revolutionary War, he was commissioned Captain of the Militia and fought under Gen. Green at the Battles of Guilford Courthouse and King's Mountain. In the early 1780's, Captain Moore became a prosperous cattle and horse raiser and, in general, a well-to-do farmer.

During the summer of 1784, Black Wolf and other Shawnee warriors, captured James Moore IV, the second son of Captain Moore, then 14 years of age. He was taken to the Ohio Country and was soon sold to a French trader who took him to the area which is now known as Detroit, on the Canadian side. The Moore family heard very little of their son.

Captain Moore was a great lover of fine horses. When James Moore IV was captured, he was some distance from his father's house, salting the horses, at the time. Captain Moore had nearly 100 horses. Black Wolf, an inferior Shawnee Chief, and two warriors, captured James Moore IV. Wolf directed the boy, by signs, to catch one of the horses, but young Moore so maneuvered that the horses ran away.

When the Indians came back two years later, they killed Captain Moore and most of the others who lived in Abb's Valley. They took three of the horses, one of them whose name was Yorick, who was not well broken. The second day, en-route to the Ohio Country, one of the warriors tried to ride Yorick, but he was thrown and trampled by the horse's fore-feet. Another, and still another attempted to ride the unbroken

horse-until he killed three Indians.

There is tradition that an early Moore family acquired the fine land in upper Augusta by a grant from the King of England, and was the first to bring Arabian horses to American soil. Allegedly, some of the Kentucky Race Horses of this day can be traced back to horses owned by the Moores. In recent years, the famous race horse farm owned by Mr. Willis Sharpe Kilmer (of Swamp Root Patent Medicine Fame) near New Market, Virginia, was part of the Moore Grant, deeded to Thomas Moore in 1756 by King George II, and some of his race horses could be traced back to the Arabian horses, whose sires were those brought from Arabia 150 years before, by Thomas Moore, one of whose kinsmen, no doubt, was James Moore, II, the immigrant and Dr. Still's great-grandfather.

In September 1786, members of the same tribe of Indians raided Abb's Valley, almost wiping out the entire settlement. James Moore III, as well as most of his family and several of his neighbors, were slain. Mrs. Moore, her daughter Mary (then age 12), two small children and Martha Evans, a neighbor girl, were carried away to Ohio. Mrs. Moore and the two small children were soon killed but, Mary Moore and Martha Evans were taken into the same area where James Moore IV had been a captive for two years. Due to the kindness of some Moravian Missionaries, James Moore IV soon discovered they were in the same

community and they saw each other occasionally.

Martha Evans' brother, then a young man, made a trip to Ohio in 1787, and learned from the Indian Chief where he could find his sister and the Moore children. Young Evans, being a daring youth, started on horseback down the New and Kanawha Rivers in 1788, after returning to his home in what is now Giles County. He crossed the Ohio and located the captives in late summer of that year, in the Detroit area on the Canadian side and he found that the French traders had been most kind to them.

The four happy young people started for home in late summer, by way of Fort Pitt, now the city of Pittsburgh, and arrived in the upper Shenandoah Valley about the time the first snow fell. James Moore IV then came to Rockbridge County where he found some accumulated income left in trust from his father's estate for himself and his sister. He returned to Abb's Valley and had a house erected near the site where

his father's house had been burned by the Indians. There he lived a normal life after he married Barbara Taylor, of Rockbridge County, in 1797. They had three children, the second of whom was Mary Poage Moore, who later became the mother of Andrew Taylor Still.

Young Evans went back to Giles County, where his sweetheart, Miss Ann Crow, was anxiously awaiting him. They had postponed their marriage until the return of the brave young man, who had undergone many hardships in order to safely bring back the Moore boy and girl, as well as his sister.

In due time, Thomas Evans married Miss Crow and they went down the famous wilderness trail into Tennessee, along the same route Sam Houston traveled when he went into Tennessee, and the Cherokee Country. Then he went northwestward into Kentucky, the country so glowingly described by Daniel Boone, and finally he crossed the Ohio River into Indiana. Evansville, Indiana, was named for him.

Mary Moore, the sister of James Moore IV, and the only other surviving member of the Moore family, did not go back to Abb's Valley with her brother, but stayed in Rockbridge County with relatives—the Poages. She married Rev. Samuel Brown in 1798. To this union were born 12 children—7 boys and 5 girls. Five of the boys became Presbyterian

ministers.

The Rev. Brown was born at Big Lick, now Roanoke, in 1766, and began his higher education at New London Academy near Bedford Court House. Later, he went to Washington College, now known as Washington and Lee University. He became the second pastor of the New Providence Presbyterian Church in 1796, near what is now the Augusta-Rockbridge County Line, close to the birthplace of McCormick, Inventor of the McCormick Reaper and Farm Implements. Rev. Brown died in 1818 and his wife in 1824, both of them buried in the cemetery at New Providence Church.

One of the sons, Rev. James Moore Brown, who took notes from his mother before she died, wrote the book, "The Captives of Abb's Valley", (a new and amplified edition, by Robert Bell Woodworth, was issued in 1942) about 1855, and the Presbyterian Publishing House at Philadelphia published it. Much of the information in this story was gleaned

from these books.

Rev. Dr. Abraham Still was born in Buncombe County, North Carolina, in 1796. He was the son of Boaz Still, who owned 800 acres of land at the turn of the 18th-19th Century. The Rev. Still was sent to Tazewell County in 1821 and again in 1823, as a Methodist Circuit Rider and Doctor. Soon he met James Moore IV, who had become a Methodist. Rev. Still courted and married Mr. Moore's daughter, Mary Poage Moore, in 1823. He was soon transferred to Lee County, where he established a home for ten years. During his stay in Lee County, he was Circuit Rider and Physician and it was during this time that the Jonesville Camp Meeting became an institution, which still exists. While the Still's lived in Lee County, a third son was born to them in 1828. He was named Andrew Taylor Still and later became one of the world's great men.

He was one-sixteenth Cherokee Indian according to the following sent to me, dated November 2, 1949 by Mrs. J. S. Denslow, of Kirksville, Missouri, granddaughter of Dr. Andrew Taylor Still, quoting: "I am

afraid the Indian is quite distant in this story."

"Jacob Lydia married Ann Wilkinson, whose one parent was a full blood Cherokee. To this union was born a daughter, Mary. This Mary Lydia married Boaz Still and his son was Abraham."

The following Historical Memorandum was written to me by Col. Jen-

nings C. Wise, an authority on the Colonial Indians:

"When the Revolution began, the dominant spiritual leader among the Iroquois peoples of the Colonies was the Mohawk Chieftain Little Abraham, who at the Council of the German Flats in 1775, urged neutrality upon all the native tribes, including those of the kindred Cherokee

Nation in the Big Smokies."

"Notwithstanding this extraordinary man, however, the British agents soon got control of the Cherokees who as active allies of the king were called upon by Generals Shelby, Williamson, and Robertson to pay a terrible price for their aid to the crown. By May, 1777 they had been compelled to enter into peace to save further desolation of their glorious country by the frontier militia."

"After the able Cherokee Chief Man Killer had pointed out that the British were responsible for the terrible fate which befell the Cherokees who, despite all the promises of the British agents were soon abandoned by their allies, the Cherokees entered into the Treaty of Fort McIntosh in 1785 with the United States pursuant to which they remained at peace while litigating their treaty rights in the Courts, until eventually most of them removed to Arkansas and to the Indian Territory along with the Chickasaw, Choctaw, Creeks, and Seminoles who with the Chero-kees constituted the so-called Five Civilized Tribes. Contrary to common idea, they were not mere uncivilized savages but before abandoning their country had converted it into a great agricultural region with farm houses, mills, cabins, churches, a highway system, police, etc., with negro slave labor had brought peach as well as tobacco and cotton culture on a high plane, and from them the Whites learned much about cotton (even before the gin was invented in 1794-95, by Eli Whitney), which was first manufactured in Georgia."

Inasmuch as the Iroquois people had been subject to Christian influences in pre-Columbian times, the name Little Abraham undoubtedly had an important esoteric significance on the Iroquois borders. Since Abraham Still was descended in the third generation from a full blood Cherokee, it is quite possible that his name harked back to Little Abraham. At any rate in his time there was no apology on the frontier for Indian blood. Nor is there any way to estimate the amount of it absorbed by the pioneers of western Virginia, Kentucky, Ohio, and Carolinas, and the Gulf States. When the few surviving Indians began to mix with the negroes, whom originally they shunned, the Whites began to disparage native blood and to conceal their Indian descent."

And while we are inserting so much about the Indians it might be

And while we are inserting so much about the Indians it might be recalled that some years ago a couple of boys were talking together—one being a McNutt and the other a descendent of Mary Moore. The McNutt lad said: "One of my relations was tapped on the shoulder by the King's sword, and he was made a KNIGHT—Sir Alexander McNutt." The other boy thought a minute and then said: "My great-grandfather, James Moore, was tapped on the head by an Indian Chief, and that made on

ANGEL of him."

Abraham Still moved to New Market, Tennessee, in 1834, in order that his children might have better educational advantages. In 1825. he and 24 other ministers, at Knoxville, Tennessee founded the Holston Methodist Conference, and later he was one of the founders of Emory and Henry College. The Holston Methodist Conference sent him to northeastern Missouri as a Missionary in 1837, the year Emory and Henry College opened its doors as an institution for higher education. Dr. Still was so opposed to the practice of slavery, he asked the Conference to send him to Missouri—his grandson, Dr. Charlie Still, told this to me. When Abraham Still's Church split over the slavery issue, while in

Missouri, the Minister sided with the Abolitionists and moved to Iowa; from there he was sent to the territory of Kansas, as a Missionary to the Shawnee Indians, some of whose warriors had massacred most of his wife's family in Virginia in 1786. Even so, his urge to be a Missionary

continued to dominate his life.

After Abraham Still became well established in his mission field, he, his sons, and brothers acquired from the government hundreds of acres of land near what is now Baldwin, Kansas.

Bishop Baker presided over that Conference the year the General

Conference met in Little Rock, Arkansas, and to this Conference Bishop Baker went with Dr. Still in the latter's buggy. It was during this trip to and from Little Rock that the needs were discussed and plans were made for a school for higher education in eastern Kansas.

made for a school for higher education in eastern Kansas.

In due time a Methodist College was established at Baldwin, Kansas, known as Baker University. The Still family, including Abraham's son, Andrew, not only gave land for the College, but they cut the timber at their saw mill to build the first buildings of Baker University.

Dr. Abraham Still was not only one of the founders of one great Methodist Institution, but aided in the founding of two—Emory and Henry College and Baker University.

The picture from which this copy was made, was found in a small Methodist country church in northern Missouri in recent years, with a card under the glass which had the following:

card under the glass which had the following:

#### 1795 — ABRAHAM STILL — 1867 FIRST METHODIST MINISTER IN NORTHERN MISSOURI PREACHED HIS FIRST SERMON IN NORTHERN MISSOURI IN 1837.

I presented a copy of this picture to Emory and Henry College at a Chapel Service Tuesday before Thanksgiving 1949.

The original was made by hand-what artists call Charcoal or Chromo

before photography was an art in this country.

Someone gave it to Dr. Charlie Still. A distinguished artist friend of his painted a portrait from the original which was given to me recently by his daughter, Dr. Elizabeth Esterline, of Kirksville, Missouri. At the age of 20, Andrew decided to become a physician and attended

a medical college in Kansas City. In due time, he began to practice with

his father and elder brother, who was also a physician.

Dr. Still represented his county in the territorial Legislature and aided the successful fight to outlaw slavery in Kansas; he was speaker of the Territorial House of Representatives at the time Kansas entered the union as a Free State; and cast the deciding vote on the issue, following a bitter struggle between the slave and free factions. While speaker of the House, he was making an address against Kansas becoming a Slave State, when a man shot him. A small book in his breast-pocket, however, saved his life, and he finished his speech courageously.

The principles of Osteopathy revealed in 1874 by Dr. Still were founded on the theory that man is the perfect machine and that as long as his human mechanism is in good running order, he will be healthy. The healthy body, Dr. Still declared, has within itself all the elements necessary to combat disease. Structural abnormalities, he continued, can cause functional disturbances in the body—in other words, disease.

Dr. Still's revelations were received in some quarters with antagonism and scorn. From 1875 to 1887, he traveled from town to town to prove the merits of Osteopathy. As his fame spread, the demand for his services became so great that he could not possibly care for everyone who came to him. He then decided in 1892 to establish a school of Osteopathy

in Kirksville, Missouri, where he had settled in 1887.

By 1900, the student body had grown from 17 to 700. In 1949, there were six approved Osteopathic Colleges in the country with more than 1700 students, and hundreds of hospitals. Dr. Still, Modern Medical Pioneer, died on Dec. 12, 1917, but lived to see many of his dreams come true and many of his original concepts are being proven scientifically to this day.

The word "Osteopathy" is difficult to define, but it refers to one of the healing art professions that provide a complete health service. Its practitioners are referred to as Doctors of Osteopathy and they are trained in all branches of medicine; the use of drugs; manipulation; and operative surgery, including obstetrics. On completion of the required training the degree D. O. (Doctor of Osteopathy) is conferred and there are now approximately 13,000 licensed osteopathic physicians

and surgeons who care for the health service of a group of Americans estimated to number about nine million. As a matter of comparison, there are about 212,000 licensed doctors of medicine (having the degree,

The log cabin, where Dr. Still was born, no longer stands in Lee County, Virginia—it was moved and restored at Kirksville, Missouri, in 1928, for the Centenary Celebration of Dr. Still's birth. The cabin now stands on a knoll, near the Kirksville College of Osteopathy and Surgery, overlooking the grave of the philosopher, physician and humanitarian—Andrew Taylor Still—Founder of Osteopathy.

An historical marker was erected by the Virginia Department of Conservation and Development near Dr. Still's birthplace. The unveiling of the marker, August 28, 1939, was attended by hundreds of Osteopathic Physicians from 13 states, including a son of the founder, Dr. and Mrs. Charlie Still, and a daughter, Mrs. Laughlin, as well as grandchildren of Andrew Taylor Still including Dr. Elizabeth Esterline. The celebration was held in the old Camp Meeting Building, near Jonesville, Virginia, erected under the pastorate of Dr. Still's father and it remains in use as an annual homecoming and is in a good state of preservation.

Late in the afternoon of the day of the Marker Unveiling, the writer had previously arranged with Dr. J. N. Hillman, then President of Emory and Henry, to have served a picnic dinner on the campus to about 100 of our party enroute from Jonesville to Roanoke, where we were to hold a Convention the next two days—there was a highway patrol

escort the entire distance.

While the writer was at Kirksville, Missouri, in 1949, he saw Dr. Charlie While the writer was at Kirksville, Missouri, in 1949, he saw Dr. Charlie Still who was in his 85th year—the only living son of the founder of Osteopathy. He said, "Harry, I'll never forget our short stop at Emory and Henry College while in Virginia in 1939. The barn dance you arranged for us in the College Gymnasium was one of the most enjoyable events of my life." Dr. Charlie was acting President of the first College of Osteopathy 1910, the year I entered school there. His father was President in name only, as he was then 82 years old.

I was on the Founder's Day Program at my Alma Mater at Kirksville, Missouri, October 7th, 1949, and stood beside the birthplace cabin of Dr. Still and read a paper concerning his Virginia and North Carolina

ancestry. Most of that paper is incorporated in this.

# MINUTES OF JANUARY 28, 1957 MEETING

In one of the dining rooms of the Mayflower Motor Court on the evening of January 28, 1957, the Rockbridge Historical Society, with 90 members present, met in a dinner session, amidst chrysanthemums and winter greens, the latter decorations arranged by Miss Elizabeth

Barclay, program chairman.

After the meeting had been opened by Col. William Couper, president, and the minutes read by Dr. Marshall Fishwick, secretary, the

following business was presented.

Mrs. P. L. Paxton, chairman of the Membership Committee, reported 12 new members had been added, and Miss Lula Dunlap gave a full financial statement of the Society. Mr. Earl Paxton of the Historical Markers Committee described with exhibits the two markers to be placed by the Society for Mrs. Margaret Preston Junkin and for Dr. Archibald Alexander.

The president reminded the membership of the significant events of the year. That of the Jamestown Celebration, and the placing of the bust of Thomas J. Jackson in the Hall of Fame at New York University

on May 19, 1957.

Miss Mary Galt then presented a notebook containing an accumulated history of the "Marriages of Rockbridge 1782-1799", prepared by the records committee of the D.A.R. headed by Mrs. John H. Bell, sister of

Mr. B. F. Harlow, and Miss Galt. This is a labor of love and a fine addition to our library. Dr. Cole Davis helped prepare the index for the

The Society expressed regret over the passing of Col. Milton Rogers.

and Mrs. Jean Cameron Agnew.

After the above business, Miss Barclay presented Mr. Harrington Waddell, who read a paper entitled "William Henry Ruffner, Virginia's Pioneer Educator." This significant paper began saying:

"Rockbridge County has produced many sons of whom she may justly be proud, men who have been distinguished as warriors, statesmen, scientists, and preachers, but I question whether any man born in this splendid old country of the Commonwealth of Virginia has done a greater service for the people of the state than William Henry Ruffner. the founder and protector of the public school system of Virginia." There followed a section on Ruffner's ancestry, in Virginia, beginning with their settlement near Luray in 1739. The father of William Henry was Dr. Henry Ruffner, who was president of Washington College from 1836-48 and whose wife was Sarah Lyle of this county. In 1824, William Henry was born in Lexington and at 18 years, he graduated from Washington College. As a young Lexingtonian, Ruffner helped in the Temperance Movement and also started a Negro Sunday school here. Beginning in 1845, he took ministerial training at the Union Theological Seminary at Hampden Sydney and at Princeton Seminary. For several years he served as pastor of churches in Charlotte County and in Philadelphia. At the latter place he served as director of the African Colonization Society. As a result of a throat condition, he had to give up the ministry and he returned to "Tribrook" his country home, about two miles south of Lexington .

Ruffner's great work came when he was selected the first Superintendent of Public Instruction for the State of Virginia. In 1869-70, he was called upon to formulate the first public school program by the General Assembly. This position was accorded him, after recommendations had been made both by General Robert E. Lee and Honorable William A. Anderson, state senator from Rockbridge. The plan was to be drafted in 30 days and presented to the General Assembly. By the end of that time, Ruffner had the 40-page report ready which soon made into law. This plan served as the basis for the public schools for 50 years, so important a document that many southern states copied it and foreign countries borrowed from it as well. For Ruffner this was only the beginning. Many battles in open debate had to be waged for both the ideals and money to implement it. This six-footer weighing 200 pounds fought hard for this program and succeeded. The eleven annual reports issued during his tenure of office made up the best history of Virginia's educational history that we have. Ruffner worked too for both teacher training and the Virginia Polytechnic Institute. Along with all of this, he had time to study in the field of Geology and made pioneer contribu-

tions in this field.

Upon retirement in 1882, the following tribute by E. C. Glass, of Lynchburg, made some years later is fully justified: "It is fair to say that the superiority of the Virginia school system is due mainly to the well perfected shape it assumed in the beginning under the moulding hand of Dr. Ruffner. No more perfect piece of machinery was ever turned out in so short a time, or set going with so much ease. In mental force, scholarship, and gifts of speech; in powers of organization, in executive ability and professional zeal, no state has ever had a chief executive school officer superior to Virginia's first Superintendent of Public Instruction. What our schools are we owe chiefly to him."

Ruffner, back home in Lexington, prepared number 4, 5, 6 Volumes of the WASHINGTON AND LEE HISTORICAL PAPERS. In November 24, 1908 the "Horace Mann" of the South, passed away and he was buried in the Lexington Cemetery.

The careful attention and the expressions at the close of the paper gave evidence of how much the membership appreciated one of its most esteemed members. One was struck by the parallels that could be drawn between W. H. Ruffner and Harrington Waddell.

### MINUTES OF APRIL 30, 1957 MEETING

The Spring meeting of the Rockbridge Historical Society was held at

Southern Seminary, in Buena Vista, Virginia.

The highlight of the business meeting was the report of Dr. Charles W. Turner, librarian, who told of a large acquisition of books from the estate of a former member, Dr. Livingston Smith and of other gifts, among which was a large cabinet formerly owned by Col. John Jordan and

which at one time served to house his collection of minerals.

Dr. Cole Davis told of the ceremonies connected with Lexington's Name Day, at which he represented the society and Mr. Earl K. Paxton reported on the placing of the historical marker at the "Robert E. Lee, Thomas J. Jackson, Margaret Junkin Preston Home and on other markers

which are being worked on.

There were brief comments concrning future metings, subjects of

papers now in preparation and kindred matters.

Members of the Society then had the pleasure of hearing from one who participated in "Virginia's Three-Hundred Fiftieth Anniversary Tour," Mrs. H. Russell Robey president of Southern Seminary, Buena Vista.

Details were given of numerous ceremonies participated in by this party which was headed by the Governor of Virginia and his lady, representatives of the State government and numerous citizens of Virginia. Following a description punctuated by stormy weather, in liners especially chartered to accommodate the party; of numerous meetings with organizations, which took occasion to bring out treasures for exhibition which even those were not accustomed to seeing; of the twists and humorous, at times serious aspects of protocol; of the problems of dress, innumerable parties and such.

The group was also treated with the projection of three reels of colored photographs about Robert E. Lee, and Thomas J. Jackson, taken

by Mrs. Robey and her husband.

Following the meeting there was a reception and refreshments in the ball room of Southern Seminary.

## MINUTES OF JULY 29, 1957 MEETING

The summer meeting of the Rockbridge Historical Society was held Monday, July 29, at 4 P.M. in the auditorium of Mallory Hall at Virginia Military Institute.

The president being absent on account of illness, the vice-president

Mrs. J. P. Alexander, presided at the short business session.

The officers present were asked for reports (Neither the secretary nor treasurer were present). The Membership chairman reported the following new members since the previous meeting: Miss Agnes J. Irwin, Maj. & Mrs. Tyson Wilson, Dr. and Mrs. J. J. B. Sebastian, and Mrs. William O. Hay, Jr. all of Lexington.

The Genealogy Chairman, Miss Ellen Anderson reported on a letter from a member of the Carl Hays family who formerly lived in Lexington. The letter being of some interest but too long to read, she gave

it to the Society for its records.

Mr. Earl Paxton of the Historical Markers Committee reported that his committee is still working on the Alexander marker. They have contacted the State Department of Conservation and Development hoping for a Highway marker; but they answered that there are no additions

being made to the series although such a marker can be erected at private expense if the State Library agrees. The Committee is planning to erect a marker at the site of Dr. Archibald Alexander's birthplace with a short biography.

Dr. Cole Davis reported on the Executive Committee Meeting at Col. Couper's home the previous week at which no action was taken to be

reported to the Society.

Mrs. Alexander introduced the speaker of the afternoon, Mrs. Jean S. Augustine, President of the Lexington Telephone Company. Her talk which follows, was entitled "Did Dr. Alexander Bell come to Rock-

bridge County?"

On the afternoon of June 2, 1875, Thomas A. Watson and Alexander Graham Bell were hard at work at the same old job of testing instruments. Watson, attempting to help Professor Bell plucked on one of the transmitter springs in order to start it vibrating. It did not start vibrating and Mr. Watson continued to pluck it when suddently Mr. Bell ran in from the other room and said "What have you done? I can hear you." Only because Professor Bell had put to his ear the receiving end of his so-called harmonic telegraph at that precise moment was he able to hear the sound produced by Mr. Watson in the other room. Professor Bell's ability to recognize that the transmission of a current of electricity that varied in intensity was the key to the transmission of voice was important; otherwise, this historic moment might have passed unrecognized.

Many months, however, passed before the intelligible words could be transmitted and even more months before full sentences. And during the summer of 1876 the telephone was talking so well that one didn't have to ask the other man to say it over again more than three or four times before one could understand quite well if the sentences were simple. This was the year of the centennial exposition at Philadelphia and Bell decided to make an exhibit there. One of the leaders of the time, trying these telephones at the exposition in Philadelphia reported that this was a great marvel. Out of the hundreds of experiments ranging from a diaphram of boiler iron several feet in diameter down to a miniature affair made of the bones and drums of a human ear there emerged practically the same telephone you take off the hook and listen with today although it was then transmitter as well as receiver.

Longer conversations on longer telephone lines soon followed. The success of each experiment being in exact accordance with the conditions of the poor, rusty wires they had to use were primarily meant for the telegraph system which at that time was pushing its way across the country. The fame of the invention spread and the people who called at the cheap boarding house where Bell lived to see the telephone would read like the roster of the American Association for the Advancement of Science. Two regular visitors were Japanese pupils of Bell.

ment of Science. Two regular visitors were Japanese pupils of Bell.
On January 28, 1887 the first commercial telephone exchange opened at New Haven, Conn., serving eight lines and twenty-one telephones. In 1890 a telephone line from Lexington to Glasgow was in operation and ready for business. On April 8, 1897 the Lexington Telephone Exchange went into successful operation. January 14, 1897 saw the first mention in a county paper of the telephone system. At that time Robert E. Lee would have been 90 years old and H. St. George Tucker was being mentioned for the governorship.

On January 23, 1890 the board authorized the installation of a telephone in the VMI Commissary. For many years this was the only tele-

phone on the post.

The Lexington Mutual Telephone Company may have been formed on March 30, 1889 but the telephone exchange did not start to operate until April 1897 at which time there were eleven stores, seven offices, nine residences, seven business places, a total of 34 hooked up. By the end of 1897 a line to the Collierstown area had been completed and there were connections with all parts of the county except Glasgow and

Natural Bridge.

In July of 1897 at one o'clock on a Saturday when the heat registered 90 degrees in the shade the telephone was used for the first time to report a fire. L. Rice Miller who lived near the scene of the fire turned

in the alarm whereby the firemen were able to get to the scene quicker.

A deal was consummated Monday night under which the Rockbridge
Mutual Telephone Company changed hands. N. C. Watts of Staunton and
T. S. Burwell of Lexington who owned stock in the company sold to R. B.

Moses and D. T. Odineal. The consideration was \$25,000.

The franchise and assets of the Lexington Telephone Company were sold at auction in the lobby of the Rockbridge National Bank on Wednes-

day, June 15 to W. W. Gibbs of Staunton.

In 1936 a new franchise was issued to the telephone company for a period of 30 years; the total number of company-owned stations at that time was 1313. At this point Mrs. Augustine explained that in 1951 her family purchased the common stock of this company. Since that time they have expanded in order to improve the service and in 1953 the Buena Vista Exchange was converted to dial operation. In 1954 the Glasgow Exchange was inaugurated and in 1956 the Lexington Exchange was converted to dial operation. She further said that their next step will be to rebuild the Brownsburg Exchange.

She said there is still no charge to call the 6500 subscribers in the county and soon we will dial them with ease. Then, we will dial Los

Angeles, etc.

Following this most interesting and entertaining talk a film was shown telling the story of Dr. Bell's life and his inventions.

### MINUTES OF OCTOBER 28, 1957 MEETING

The Rockbridge Historical Society held its Fall meeting at "The Castle", with Col. William Couper presiding.

Dr. Charles W. Turner, Associate Professor of History at Washington and Lee University, was elected president. At the same meeting the following slate of officers was elected: First vice-president, Marshall W. Fishwick; Recording Secretary, Major Chester B. Goolrick; Corresponding secretary, Mrs. George D. Wiltshire; Treasurer, Miss Lula S. Dunlap; Librarian, Miss Mary M. Galt; Second Vice-President, Mrs. H. Russell Robey; Third Vice-President, Mrs. Virginia C. Shattuck; Fourth Vice-President, Mr. Harrington Waddell; Fifth Vice-President, Mrs. J. B. Wood; Sixth Vice-President, Mrs. Charles McCulloch; Seventh Vice-President, Mrs. Rosa Tucker Mason.

Various committees reported on recent gifts and activities of the Society. One project afoot is to establish a suitable marker at the birthplace of Dr. Archibald Alexander, founder and first professor at the Princeton Divinity School. Several recent gifts to the library have greatly increased its scope, according to Dr. Turner. Books not pertinent to the field of local history will be turned over to the Rockbridge

Regional Library.

One highlight of the meeting was the presentation to the Society of the academic robe and hood of Dr. John R. S. Sterrett (1851-1914), native of Rockbridge County, who won fame as a Greek scholar and archeologist. Buried at the Bethesda Presbyteran Church, Dr. Sterrett was widely acclaimed for his work in the early years of the twentieth century.

All four of his daughters were given Greek names (Daphne, Anassa, Marika, and Phoebe); and all four attended the meeting for the presentation. They are Mrs. Daphne Greenwood of Rydal, Pennsylvania, Mrs. Anassa Shewsbury of Washington, D.C.; Mrs. Marika Sterrett of Alexandria, Virginia; and Mrs. Phoebe Weeks, of New York City. Also attending was a grandson, John R. S. Greenwood of Little Compton, Rhode Island, who presented the Society with a portrait of his grand-

The speaker of the evening was Dr. W. Edwin Hemphill, editor of VIRGINIA CAVALCADE and author of the new eleventh-grade textbook of Virginia History (CAVALIER COMMONWEALTH). Dr. Hemphill spoke on "Records of Rockbridge in Richmond." In this address he stated that:

My first intention, when I accepted a month ago your appreciated invitation, telephoned by Colonel Couper, to speak to you tonight, was to bring to you a narrative presentation of some narrow subject within the vast scope of your county's history. I need not remind you that a thousand choices were available to me for consideration. The history of Rockbridge comprehends more than one county's proportionate share of the significant personalities and developments in the total story of our commonwealth. I thought, to mention just one example, how much I would enjoy preparing a fresh biography of the Reverend William Spotswood White, D. D., the Presbyterian pastor who climaxed in Lexington during 1848-1873 a career that had already begun to influence Virginia's civilization in several localities and in several important aspects.

But I have chosen, partly because of two indications concerning the background of the invitation, to talk about a different kind of subject. I have put aside the temptation to hazard a narrative or analytical development of some one local personality or theme selected from the many I considered. I shall attempt no exhaustive and possibly exhausting treatment of a single phase or episode of your local history. Instead, I have decided—for better, I hope, rather than worse—to bring to you a somewhat general commentary on the records of Rockbridge County's history to be found in the Virginia State Library in Richmond.

Comparatively speaking, you and others are to be congratulated upon both the number and the quality of the published volumes that can be assembled upon a Rockbridge County historical bookshelf. But the definitive history of your county has not yet made its appearance. You are more fortunate than some of your counterparts in other Virginia counties in the wealth of the research materials that are locally available to those of you who are at work upon your county's history or upon various parts of that whole. But there are also in distant depositories other materials that your researchers should not overlook. I propose to indicate the nature of some of these—those that you can consult in the official archives of your state government.

These source materials are chiefly in manuscript form. Few have been reproduced in print. They are so voluminous that it would be unrealistic to hope that they can ever be published in their entirety, although that conclusion should not be permitted to forestall recurrent or continual consideration of the values that would accrue from the publication of selected portions of the total.

In most instances, these manuscripts are in Richmond rather than in Rockbridge County for a good reason: they were sent to our state capital in keeping with the orderly processes of government, and they have been preserved there quite properly as records of the functioning of public affairs. In Richmond various public servants through the years have written and kept records concerning your county; to Richmond various public servants and private citizens of Rockbridge County have sent records. Fortunately, the large bulk of these official archives of the Commonwealth of Virginia—and many records of the Old Dominion's colonial period as well—have survived bureaucratic and other hazards; they are preserved in the Virginia State Library. Even more fortunately, but not merely as a capricious result of chance, most of them are arranged in intelligible, logical order and are about as readily accessible to research workers as anyone can reasonably expect.

What do the records of Rockbridge in Richmond include? What parts of your local history do they embody? What is their worth to those who seek an understanding of the past and present of your com-

munity? To these questions I shall give answers that are merely suggestive rather than complete, for I have not examined each of the thousands of individual items upon which final answers should be based. I have found it practicable to enumerate only some of the record groups in which you are likely to be interested. I invite and challenge you to proceed yourselves beyond the farthest point that I, in my concern with the whole history of our state, have been able to reach in the

pursuit of your past.

One of the many sets of records in Virginia's official archives is a massive body of land grants. Many of these reveal where and under what circumstances Rockbridge County real estate was acquired. Forwarded under state law from your county to Richmond were marvelously detailed annual tax reports. These illustrate the principle that the bane of past taxpayers can become the boon of present investigators. From the 1780's onward for decades these manuscripts itemize the number and value of such items of taxable property as carriages, livestock, and slaves. What things were made subject by law to taxation varied from time to time. After the War of 1812 even the mirrors hanging on our forefathers' walls were required to be enumerated and appraised.

Contrary to the well-known custom under which retiring Presidents of the United States are entitled to treat as personal property all of the correpondence they write and receive, the letters written to and by the Governors of the Commonwealth of Virginia have been retained by the state among its archives. These communications to and from our chief executives have been published only in the instances of those who held office during approximately the first decade of the commonwealth. Citizens of Rockbridge County were often prompted to dash off a letter to the Governor; some, indeed, were provoked into telling him, the most natural personification of the power of their government, of the woes it brought to them. Until 1851 our chief executive was assisted—or, as some might prefer to express it, was either abetted or hampered—by an executive Council of State. The manuscript records of that body, quite incompletely published, reveal to the patient researcher many problems that motivated and actions that affected the lives of people in Rockbridge.

Documents received or prepared by other agencies of government comprehend grist for the mills of Rockbridge historians. Among these manuscripts, for example, are those pertaining to the Literary Fund, which has influenced the education of Virginians for about a century and a half, the Board of Public Works, which managed our state's staggering ante-bellum investments in internal improvements such as canals and turnpikes, and the post-bellum Railroad Commission. Moreover, there is the enormous accumulation of legislative bills. These embody the early form of proposed legislation. They can sometimes become especially significant when compared with the final form of an enacted, published statute or when correlated with the failure of the proposal to win the approval of the General Assembly or of the Governor.

The official documents in such collections of manuscripts are supplemented by occasional items that are unofficial in nature. One of these, for example, is the personal diary of Governor John Floyd, whose Rockbridge County nephew, James McDowell, did more than yeoman service in testing the sentiments of the General Assembly just before and during the slavery debates of 1831-1832 and in leading Governor Floyd to decide not to introduce his plan for emancipation. And some who use the resources in Richmond are pleasantly astonished to find convenient access there to such official records of other governments as copies of the federal census records, in which you can find, especially for the years from 1850 onward, much information concerning individual

people, schools, churches, and other factors in the development of Rockbridge.

These concise comments serve only to summarize in barest outline the richness of the research resources in Richmond that are awaiting exploitation. Let us assay this latent wealth by sampling one of its lodes.

Deep in our state's official archives, but available simply upon call, is a mammoth body of manuscripts known as the Legislative Petitions. They consist of tens of thousands of pleas and remonstrances made by Virginians, including residents of Rockbridge County, to the General Assembly. If only because they give evidence of the vitality of a right to which our ancestors have clung tenaciously almost since the dawn of representative government, these petitions are important. Not long after the Parliament of England began to evolve, Englishmen began to insist that any man could petition his legislators regarding any grievance or desire whatsoever that he might happen to have. To our English ancestors' reliance upon the right of petition we Americans have added a characteristic faith in the panacea that proclaims, "There ought to be a law"

These two tenets of our political creed combine to produce results that are often remarkable. Certainly the floods of petitions that have inundated the General Assembly of Virginia in colonial and later days justify that adjective. Their effect, too, has sometimes been remarkable. A case in point is to be found in the way relentless petitioners led their new commonwealth of 1776 to disestablish the moderately tolerant church of the colony and to go onward until a statute of religious freedom was enacted ten year later and until the heir of the state church was divested of certain preferential properties about two decades later still. But for the right of petition, the right of religious liberty might not have been gained.

I can assure you that the hundreds upon hundreds of petitions from Rockbridge County, which the Virginia State Library has filed in the order of their receipt by the General Assembly, are wonderfully varied in content. Some are formal and long, some informal and brief. Some are couched in the verbose phraseology of legal language, some in the simple, direct words of the people. Some were penned by the semiliterate, some by educated folk who had time enough—and used it—to express themselves well. In some one finds ambiguities, deliberate or unintended; in others, evidence of explosive indignation of the most obviously righteous sort; in others still, signs that carefully considered plans for the public welfare have proved, in practice, to have an unexpected "joker" in the form of adverse effects upon some innocent, previously unalarmed segment of the population. In some instances a single individual petitioned the legislature exclusively on his own initiative; in others a petition became the end product of a mass meeting and expressed the outraged or hopeful sentiments discussed by a dozen or a score or a hundred neighbors. Especially after about 1840 an occasional petition was prepared in printed form and with multiple copies, each of which left considerable room at the bottom for the hundreds of signatures sought by propagandists, crusaders, and other manufacturers of the public opinion of the masses.

Let us examine, as a sample of these Rockbridge County petitions chosen almost at random, the petitions from Rockbridge County received by the legislature during the two years of 1850 and 1851. The first is a handwritten plea signed by twenty-seven citizens of the Natural Bridge section for a savings bank to be chartered for their community. Endorsements written upon this paper after its arrival in Richmond show that it was referred to the Committee on Banking and that a bill intended to accomplish the requested result was reported by the committee on January 18, 1850. In another petition forty-four citizens of Lexington asked for a bank of discount and deposit there.

In yet another petition five stockholders of the Tye River and Blue

Ridge Turnpike Company recited their toll road's disappointing, unprofitable history and its relapse into the condition of a free road during the past two years, neither of its two toll gates having been operated. These stockholders sought the liquidation of the companyowned lots and buildings located at the unremunerative toll gates. Still another petition reveals the fact that a toll road on the opposite side of the county was experiencing difficulties of a different sort. President James Montgomery, Director John Letcher, and two other directors of the Lexington and Covington Turnpike Company cited the high cost of maintaining their roadbed and begged to be permitted to reduce its

width from twenty to eighteen feet.

Forty-two trustees and citizens of Lexington, in an 1850 petition, told the General Assembly that they were unable "to enforce the ordinances which have been enacted for the preservation of peace and good order in the said town." This was true, they claimed, because of "the want of an officer responsible to them . . . invested with full power to punish all violations of the laws" and because their policeman could not cause offenders to be jailed overnight in the county jail without first procuring a warrant. To remedy these evils, the petitioners prayed that the town's voters should be authorized to elect annually a mayor, that he should be granted all the powers of a justice of the peace, and that the county's jailer should be permitted, with the consent of the county court, to lock up the town's prisoners for as much as twelve hours without a warrant. The General Assembly learned of the desire of another segment of its Rockbridge constituency through the medium of the petition from citizens of the Goshen election precinct for the removal of their polling place from Goshen to Panther Gap. Hearty concurrence in this plea was specifically given by the proprietor of the polling quarters at Goshen, but his reasons remained, quite intriguingly, unstated.

Goshen, but his reasons remained, quite intriguingly, unstated.

One of the notable organizations in Virginia of people devoted to cultural pursuits, the Franklin Society of Lexington, found reason in 1851 to ask the legislature for more power than the society had been granted previously. Its building was inadequate. Its members sought authority to construct new facilities, at an expense not exceeding \$25,000, for their activities and library. If it should prove to be expedient, they urged, their new building might serve as the town hall. If I may mention again an endorsement on such an application, you may be interested to know that this one elicited a bill that went into the legislative terested to know that this one elicited a bill that went into the legislative

hopper on February 26, 1851.
Consider for a moment how the institutional history of your community can be revealed in a legislation petition. A memorial from a committee of the Trustees of Washington College in 1851 pleaded for its release from the obligation of paying interest on a loan of \$4,000 that it had received from the state's Literary Fund. In support of this request, the committee argued that the school had given free tuition to 117 indigent students during the past seventeen years—a gift having a total value,

at the rate of \$30 per student per annum, of \$3,510.

Fairly typical of many petitions from individuals are two others considered by the Assembly in 1851. Jacob B. Clyce, who had "been for a long series of years a carpenter and House Joiner," begged for \$538.70 that had been due to him ever since he had completed the making of "all the sash, doors & etc" for the state's arsenal in Lexington under an 1817 contract. Modestly, even miraculously, he did not ask for the interest this principal would have earned through the intervening years. With this petition was enclosed a copy of the relevant contract. At least eight other individuals assured the legislature that they believed the facts alleged by Clyce to be true, his claim to be just. Nevertheless, his claim won only a cryptic endorsement in Richmond, "Rejected.'

The other individual was George W. Himes, to whom had been assigned certain rights by the only surviving daughter of the famous Robert Morris of Philadelphia, chief financier of the American Revolution, who had gone bankrupt in 1801 and had died five years later. Morris had speculated in Virginia lands. Because taxes on them had fallen into arrears, title to them had reverted to the Commonwealth of Virginia for the benefit of its Literary Fund. Himes petitioned for nothing less than that the state should give to him outright all its interest in all these lands, and the only ground he offered for this requested generosity, other than his legal position in respect to Morris's heir, was his implication that the state might thus want to honor a Revolutionary patriot.

All of the remaining petitions received by the General Assembly in 1850 and 1851 from Rockbridge County deal with the North River Canal.\* Success followed the arrival in Richmond on January 4, 1958, of a petition prepared by five individuals chosen for that purpose by a meeting of sundry unidentified citizens of the county. The five set forth in their memorial at some length and with considerable detail "the great importance of the improvement of the North River so as to render it navigate for the freight boats now used on the James River canal." Beside the North River, since renamed the Maury, which coursed through the center of the count to empty into the James

\* A brief summary of the navigation of this stream can be found in Elizabeth Dabney Coleman and W. Edwin Hemphill, "Boats Beyond the Blue Ridge," VIRGINIA CAVALCADE, vol. III, no. 4 (Spring, 1954), pp. 8-13.

at the top of Balcnoy Falls lay seven iron furnaces and three forges. These might produce in 1850 the five committeemen alleged, about 7,000 tons of metal. If this output were carried downstream to Richmond by bateaux, as in the past, it would be at a cost of about \$7.50 per ton. The prospective completion of the facilities of the James River canal to the mouth of the North River in 1850 would reduce that figure to about \$5.00. If the North River were similarly improved for twenty upstream miles to Lexington to accommodate canal freighters, the cost of shipment would drop to about \$3.50 per ton. Enough lime from Rockbridge quarries "to meet any possible demand, and dirt cheap," plus "inexhaustible quantities" of hydraulic cement and pure white, jet black, and other types of marble "of the finest textures," would become available. To these items of mineral wealth would be added the county's agricultural surplus. The "feeder" branch along the North River would double the tonnage handled by the canal below Balcony Falls. "There is then no doubt," concluded the petitioners, "that the state would be reimbursed for her appropriation to the North River improvement, by the increased tolls on her great work, the James River Canal"—which, it was a matter of common knowledge 'broughout the state, was still far from justifying the millions invested in that project.

So the North River Navigation Company was authorized by law early in 1850. Its capital consisted of \$100,000. The state subscribed \$60,000; the county, \$15,000; the town of Lexington, \$10,000; and individual stockholders, the remaining \$15,000. Then, within less than a year, as we learn from petitions transmitted to the General Assembly early in 1851, the company began to confront troubles galore. The survey of the North River route and estimate of its total cost at the \$100,000 level had been made by a civil engineer in the V.M.I. faculty in 1846. His computations had excluded land damages, engineering expenses, and contingencies. Since 1846 the prices of labor and provisions had risen as much as fifty percent. Moreover, the specifications for construction work had grown better, more durable (with locks and dams of cemented stone),

and hence more expensive.

Within a few months after it had begun to let its first contract, the company incurred the expense of printing petitions asking the state to increase the capital stock to \$175,000—a figure which by an amusing typographical error, omitted the first digit and had to be corrected on each copy by hand. The state was asked to underwrite its usual three-fifths of the additional amount .Intentionally or otherwise, the petition indicated

in one of its paragraphs that the other two-fifths would be offered both to the county government and to individual investors and suggested in another paragraph that the county would provide the other two-fifths. To some readers this difference might hardly seem to matter. The additional funds would rescue the iron industry of Rockbridge from its admittedly "very depressed condition" of 1850. Moreover, the petitioners asserted their belief that in a few years the company "will pay a dividend," their confidence that "under no circumstance will the investment of the state in this work be injudicious." To this summary of the project's situation and this optimistic view of its future 273 citizens

of the county subscribed their names.

Other citizens of Rockbridge disagreed emphatically. Five copies of a counter petition, also printed, were circulated, were signed by 159 people (not counting two whose names were subsequently scratched, as if they had changed their minds), and were sent to Richmond. These objectors pointed out that the estimated cost of \$175,000 was much too low. To extend the James River Canal twenty miles from Balcony Falls to Buchanan, under plans calling for locks to lift its vessels 100 feet, was expected to cost \$700,000. It could hardly be expected, therefore, that the twenty-mile waterway to Lexington, involving twice as high an elevation, would cost only a fourth as much. Moreover, charged the enemies of the North River project, the company had let its first construction contracts for sections of the route about halfway between Balcony Falls and Lexington. Its capital would be exhausted before the work could progress as far as either terminus of the project. Thus, despite its existence in what the petitioners called "this enlightened age of improvement," the company presented "the singular spectacle...of commencing a canal in the middle, and leaving each end unfinished, and having in fact, so far as points of trade are concerned, neither BEGIN-NING NOR END." This "absurd scheme" was exposed by the objectors as a deliberate "attempt... to coerce the State and the stockholders... to expend a large sum of money against their will." The plot was, in their opinion, "highly reprehensible."

The rub lay in the fact, as they understood it, that forty percent of the new capital sought by the company was "to be raised by a tax upon the freeholders of Rockbridge County." The 159 signers protested that they did "not desire an increase of their burden of taxation for any such purpose." On Christmas Eve in 1850 one copy of this petition bearing forty-three signatures, "all good and true," was forwarded with a covering letter by mail, in order "to keep it out of the hands of the enemy," by Robert Hamilton of Buffalo Creek to William Weaver, the postmaster at Buffalo Forge, who was a leader of the anti-canal forces. Hamilton dared to hope that, if "the same feeling prevails in other sections of the County that exists here," its people "shall be saved from an onorous

SIC, profitless and unjust tax."

A manuscript remonstrance similar to Weaver's printed one was signed by 122 citizens of the southwestern portion of the county. These residents of the area south of Buffalo Creek reiterated the accusations made in the printed protest. In addition, they argued that the James River Canal itself would be extended for twelve miles near their lands and that it "will afford us . . . every facility that we desire for the transportation of our produce." In order to show "the utter inutility of the proposed improvement (of the North River) to us," these residents to the south of Buffalo Creek forwarded with their petition a manuscript map of the county's roads, streams, and other features. The map measures approximately six inches square and can be of a significance far beyond that for which it was drawn. If Rockbridge County should be authorized to tax anybody at all in order to buy additional stock in so foolish a project as the North River Canal, the 122 protesters who lived south of Buffalo Creek wanted to be specifically exempted from that tax.

Well, a total of 281 petitioners against further investments in the canal were aligned against 273 who favored granting it additional capital. It

was not a case of the majority ruling. The state, as well as the company, was already embarked upon the project. So the legislature in 1851 authorized the company to raise additional funds and subscribed the state's additional allotment. With the canal's later history, a curious medley of good and bad results that yet remain to be described well, we are not here concerned. But it is safe to predict that the worthy chronicle of its colorful story for which I devoutly wish cannot be written by anyone who fails to search the legislative petitions from Rockbridge County for

relevant information not available elsewhere.

Finally, I shall say two more things, each with assurance. One is that those who write about almost any aspect of the history of Rockbridge County can ill afford to bypass the basic sources that await examination in our state's official archives, since by doing so they will overlook items even more unexpected than the map of the county's roads filed with a petition against its canal. The other is that, although the staff of the Virginia State Library can attempt to help only those who help themselves, it stands ready to welcome for more than eight hours daily except Sundays all intelligent investigators who seek to use in any reasonable way the treasurers of the past that it preserves for the present and for the future.

#### MINUTES OF JANUARY 23, 1958 MEETING

More than sixty members of the Rockbridge County Historical Society were present at the Robert E. Lee Hotel on January 23, 1958, for the annual winter meeting. The Society enjoyed a delicious meal at tables on which flowers were colorfully arranged in globes which had their own historical signficance, having once been used as gas globes for the

original Buena Vista lighting system.

Dr. Charles W. Turner, presiding at his first meeting since his election as president, spoke of some of the things which he hoped to see the Society accomplish in the coming months. Among these, he suggested, were a program to be devoted to the music of the region, a historical fashion show, a program on the ghosts of the county, the publishing of the Society's proceedings, development of the gardens at "The Castle", and expansion of the membership.

Miss Dunlap reported a balance on hand of \$1,427.63.

Mr. Earl K. Paxton reported on the Society's marker for Archibald

Miss Ellen Anderson presented the Society with six deeds dating from the late eighteenth century and all signed by Virginia governors. They were to be added to the Society's collection of local records.

Another gift came from Miss Mary Galt on behalf of the Virginia Frontier Chapter of the D.A.R This was a corrected photostatic copy of a marriage book designated as "pre-No. 1" since it antedated the No. 1 book up to 1800 which the D.A.R. presented a copy of to the Society

Miss Galt also called attention to an article on Rockbridge County by Dr. Fishwick in THE IRON WORKER, a magazine published in Lynchburg, and expressed the belief that the magazine should be commended

for helping preserve Virginia history.

Following the business session, the Society heard an interesting talk by Dr. Robert F. Hunter, assistant professor of history at Virginia Military Institute, on some aspects of Virginia turnpike history which follows:

There is a venerable story about an elderly Scottish Presbyterian lady who was known for quickness of wit and sharpness of tongue. One Sunday morning she was irritated by the performance of the minister, who, feeling proud of his own effort, asked her after church how she had liked his sermon. "There were three things wrong with it," she said. "First, y'read it. Second, y'read it badly. And third, it wasn't worth readin'." I shall be vulnerable this evening to all three charges, but for the sake of my captive audience, I hope not guilty of more than the first For several years I explored in the printed and manuscript records of the Board of Public Works, in the manuscript petitions to the General Assembly and other source materials, piecing together the story of the turnpike movement in Virginia between the time the Board of Public Works was created in 1816, and the outbreak of war in 1861. The war put an end to the turnpike movement, although not to every turnpike company. Now and then I felt that J. Frank Dobie was right when he defined a doctoral dissertation as "transferring bones from one graveyard to another." But there eventually emerged what impressed me as an absorbing story. I would like to share my interest in it with you during the next few minutes.

#### TRANSPORTATION PROBLEMS

The present study falls into three main divisions. The introductory part discusses in general terms the Old Dominion's inheritance of a conservative Legislature and an unsolved but increasingly important transportation problem, and its innovations: the Fund for Internal Improvement, the Board of Public Works, the General Turnpike Law, the system of mixed enterprise and the "two-fifths rule." The first part of this paper is an attempt to discuss in detail the financing, construction and maintenance of Virginia turnpikes. Their financing was by a combination of private and public funds in the case of the companies that built and operated toll roads as private enterprises, although some turnpikes were built and operated entirely by the state. The state's sources of funds for this purpose was limited; since taxation was not increased appreciably, the main source of funds as demand increased was the credit of the state. The result was an overburdening of Virginia's credit (the Old Dominion owed \$33,000,000 in 1860, mostly for internal improvements), a circumstance that seems still to be vividly remembered by Virginia's political mentors in the mid-twentieth century. Private funds for turnpike companies were scarce, and those who did invest seem to have had other motives than an expectation of profitable stock dividends.

In the construction and maintenance of Virginia turnpikes, the amateurs who did most of the work had expert advice from the state's Principal Engineer, Claudius Crozet, and his able assistants. Their advice was ignored more than it was followed, however, with unfortunate effects. The quality of construction and maintenance on Virginia turnpikes is examined in detail in light of the best engineering standards of the day. With a few exceptions, they were far below those standards. The turnpike was an unsatisfactory and even unsound device for the construction and maintenance of a system of improved roads in the nineteenth century. It was too easy for tollpayers to avoid paying tolls if they could overcome their moral scruples enough to make use of the inevitable "shunpikes." The evidence seems convincing that people felt no compunctions about using the "shunpikes" (short detours around tollgates) where the quality of the turnpike was little if any better than that of a common road; but if they felt that the turnpike company provided them with a markedly improved road, they were more inclined to pay the tolls.

The second main division of the study is the section, which traces the individual histories of what have been labelled the "four superhighways": the Kanawha, the Northwestern, the Staunton and Parkersburg, and the Southwestern turnpikes. These represented the state's weak bid for the western trade, although it must be acknowledged that the three that crossed the Trans-Alleghany section (West Virginia) encountered enormous physical obstacles, and were beset with frustrating economic

and political handicaps as well.

In the third main division, there is an attempt to examine the relationships of turnpikes to the economic and political life of Virginians. The

economic life served by turnpikes consisted almost entirely of agriculture. Benefits to farmers are discussed in some detail, and in the section entitled "Interdependence of Turnpikes and Agriculture," it is concluded that most Virginians were convinced that a system of improved transportation had to precede any general improvement of agricultural techniques. The best Virginia turnpikes reduced the cost of transportation by about thirty per cent. Turnpikes could compete more successfully with water transportation than is generally thought, because water transportation took so much time. Railroad competition with turnpikes was not always fatal, even along parallel lines, but was sometimes actually beneficial. In some other states, the free road has been acknowledged to have been a more serious threat to turnpikes, but Virginia tended to be divided into a "turnpike country" west of the Blue Ridge and a "free road Country" east of it.

The periods of greatest activity in turnpike building seemed to coincide with the periods of intensive activity in the field of political reform, preceding the constitutional revisions of 1830 and 1851, which suggests an important relationship between turnpikes and politics. There are other evidences that the Legislature made an effort to appear generous to the western counties with appropriations for turnpikes, and during the later reform movement attempted to screen even greater generosity to eastern railroads with such appropriations. The westerners were not deceived; their often repeated complaint of discrimination against the Trans-Alleghany in the distribution of internal improvement aid by the Legislature lasted throughout the period, and was one of the principal causes of the dismemberment of the State.

THE BOARD OF PUBLIC WORKS

Early in 1816 New York and Pennsylvania were beginning to renew their active interest in securing the western trade. Governor Wilson Cary Nicholas called this to the attention of the General Assembly, which responded (5 February 1816) by passing "An Act to Create a Fund for Internal Improvement." This act also created the Board of Public Works.

The Board of Public Works was comprised of thirteen members: (1) the Governor, who was president EX OFFICIO; (2) the treasurer of the Commonwealth; (3) the attorney-general; and (4) ten citizens, "of whom three shall reside westward of the ALLEGHANY mountain; two between the ALLEGHANY and the BLUE RIDGE; three between the BLUE RIDGE and the great post road (along the fall line). and the residue, between that road and the sea coast. A majority (7) was required to do business (the governor's presence was not required), they were elected annually by a joint ballot of the two houses, and they received the same pay and allowances as members of the Legislature.

The purpose for which the Board of Public Works was created was

... the president and directors of the board of public works shall be ... authorized to subscribe in behalf of the Commonwealth, to such public works, as the General Assembly may, from time to time, agree to patronize, such portions of the revenue of the fund for internal improvement, as may be directed by law; but ... no part of the said fund shall be subscribed towards the stock of any canal, turnpike, or other company, until three- fifths at least of the whole stock (necessary to complete such canal turnpike or other public

detailed by the act of 5 February 1816 as follows:

stock (necessary to complete such canal, turnpike, or other public work of such company,) shall have been otherwise subscribed. Here was the basic pattern of Virginia's system of mixed enterprise; the state to put up two-fifths of the money if private subscribers would put up three-fifths. The state would begin paying on its subscription in proportion as private stockholders had paid in, so soon as private stockholders had actually paid in twenty per cent of their three-fifths share.

By the early 1830's, when the system of mixed enterprise had had time in which to prove itself, but had been found wanting, the Legisla-

ture was of the opinion that its policy had been too generous, and accordingly increased the amount of private subscription required to be paid in to twenty-five per cent, before the state would pay anything. This attitude was also reflected in the 1831 reorganization of the Board of Public Works. This was soon discovered to have been a mistaken policy, however, and by 1838, the state had begun to shift to a policy of putting up three-fifths of the capital if private stockholders would put up two-fifths.

THE GENERAL TURNPIKE LAW OF 1817

In this general discussion of the background of the turnpike movement in Virginia, there remains one important topic: the law designed to guide the Board of Public Works in its dealings with turnpike companies.

The General Turnpike Law, as it was usually called, was passed 7 February 1817, and was quite lengthy and detailed. Through the period it remained in force essentially as written, with amendments concerned only with minor details. If one were to use the legal records as the only historical source for a study of the turnpike movement in Virginia, he would gain the totally false impression that at least the legal and financial aspects were essentially static. Actually, both aspects were nearly as dynamic as the construction process itself. The General Turnpike Law may have remained essentially the same in form, but there were frequent changes in interpretation of the law's provisions, some of them basic. There were experiments with different financial arrangements during most of the ante-bellum period as well.

Every turnpike company had to apply to the Legislature for a charter, which always specified the amount of capital stock authorized, and usually the denominations of shares. When, upon the opening of subscription books, one-half of the authorized stock should be subscribed (but not necessarily paid for), "then the said subscribers . . . shall be and they are hereby declared incorporated into a company, with all the rights, privileges and immunities of a corporation or body politic in law." The next step was to elect a president and five directors (term of office: one year).

One of the first problems facing every turnpike company president and his board of directors was persuading the subscribers to pay for their stock, for which contingency the law provided that if a subscriber should be delinquent thirty days, his stock could be sold at public auction. If the proceeds exceeded the original contract, the original subscriber received the difference: if less, he could be sued for the difference.

received the difference; if less, he could be sued for the difference.

The law anticipated differences of opinion between turnpike officials and landowners, and provided, on the subject of the assessment of damages, that the principals should "apply to the court of the county... and . . . it shall be the duty of the court to appoint five discreet, intelligent, disinterested and impartial freeholders, to assess the damages." As for another aspect of eminent domain, the company's right to use materials adjacent to the road, the law provided that company officials should be at liberty, by themselves, their officers, agents, or servants, at any time, to enter upon any adjacent lands, and to cut, quarry, dig, take and carry away therefrom, any wood, stone, gravel, or earth, which they may deem necessary: PROVIDED, HOWEVER, That they shall not, without the consent of the owner, cut down any fruit tree or trees, preserved in any field or lot, for shade or for ornament, or take any timber, gravel, stone or earth, constituting any part of any fence or building. For all wood, stone, gravel or earth taken under authority of this act, and for all incidental injuries done to the inclosures, crops, woods or grounds, in taking or carrying the same away, the said president and directors shall make, to the owner, a fair and reasonable compensation, to be ascertained, if the parties cannot agree, by any three impartial, intelligent and disinterested freeholders . . (appointed and sworn by a Justice of the Peace).

For any "wanton or wilful injury" done by turnpike officials, they would be liable for double damages.

The General Turnpike Law included regulations concerning the width of turnpikes, their surfacing, the contruction of "summer roads," the erection of toll gates, the weight of loads and the width of wheels, rates of tolls, remedies against non-payers, persons exempted, and so on, all of which are discussed in subsequent chapters. Two other basic provisions remain to be mentioned here.

Probably the most important provision of the entire law, from the viewpoint of the operating company, dealt with procedure when the road should be out of repair. If this should happen, stated the law,

. . . and information thereof shall be given to any justice of the peace in the neighborhood, he shall issue a warrant to a constable, commanding him to summon three discreet and disinterested freeholders, to meet on the said road at a certain time; and if, on enquiry by the said freeholders, or any two of them, acting on oath . . . the said road shall be found to be out of repair, according to the true intent and meaning of this act, then the said magistrate shall make report of his proceedings thereupon . . . From the time that any such judgment shall be pronounced by the freeholders as aforesaid, all tolls upon every part of the said turnpike road . . . shall be suspended, and shall continue suspended until the said road, in the part so adjudged out of repair, shall have been completely repaired,

part so adjudged out of repair, snail nave been completely repaired, and the repair therewith ascertained.

Finally, it was stated unequivocally by the General Turnpike Law that, "in consideration of the expenses the proprietors will incur in opening, improving, and repairing the said road," the turnpike company and its property "shall be deemed personal estate, and shall be exempt from any public charge or tax whatsoever." Later on, railroads would be subject to taxation in Virginia, but never the turnpikes.

THE VIRGINIA SYSTEM OF MIXED ENTERPRISES

THE VIRGINIA SYSTEM OF MIXED ENTERPRISES Great Britain had pioneered the way through the dilemma of providing better roads for the travelling public with the TURNPIKE TRUST, which was a committee of citizens in each of the cities and towns authorized to borrow money, have turnpikes constructed, collect tolls for their maintentance and for the amortization of the debt, and when the debt should be paid, to cease and desist from the collection of tolls and surrender the road to the public. This theory did not often work out in practice, for the turnpike trusts did not fulfill their obligations as a

rule; instead, they became vested interests, with the trustees pocketing proceeds as if they were running private enterprises.

In New England, the section first to import the English turnpike system, the principle of user-support through the collection of tolls was system, the principle of the trust, with the planned surrender of the road to the public so soon as it should have paid for itself, was not adopted. Instead, the New Englanders chartered private corporations to do the work, so that the turnpike's status as a money-making enterprise was to continue indefinitely. Private interests and the profit motive prevailed in New England, at least in theory.

An interesting and ironical paradox developed, however. While the English turnpike trusts became vested interests, pocketing the proceeds from tolls until Parliament investigated them and corrected this perversion of the trust principle, the New England private enterprise system produced virtually no profits, and the roads constructed, such as they were, mostly reverted to the public within a few decades after all—the avowed intent of the British system, but not of the New England

Virginia's experience differed from New England's mainly in one respect: in New England, the state left private enterprise to find its own funds, while in Virginia the state gave financial aid to the turnpike companies, leaving them virtually all the privileges of private enterprise. States Senate on roads and canals (4 April 1808) he made his case for federal aid. He remarked that in some countries roads and canals could ordinarily be constructed by private enterprise, but in America the odds were against it for two reasons: (1) the relative scarcity of capital here, and (2) the vast expanse of thinly populated territory. The first of these factors was important because those who possessed what little fluid capital there was in America could find more profitable things in which to invest it: land, slaves, ships, or goods for which there was a demand in either domestic or foreign commerce. The second was important because a thinly populated area could not provide enough traffic for the road or canal to pay for its construction and maintenance.

Virginia made no gesture in the direction of the English trust system, but instead adopted in 1816 the system of mixed enterprise, or state aid to private enterprise. Henry St. George Tucker, commenting on the system at the time, asserted that the state's subscription was "a moderate insurance against loss to private adventurers, who are expected to be attracted to all such enterprises by the hope of gain." Tucker felt that private enterprise would introduce into the internal improvements program such inherent virtues as its "cautious sagacity, perservering industry, and increasing vigilance," which would be helpful, if not essential,

to the success of the program.

The beginnings, as already suggested, were not auspicious. While still in the process of a slow start after three years, Virginia and the Republic experienced the Panic of 1819 and several years of depression. By 1824, government aid to internal improvements, state or federal, was an unpopular idea among the leaders in Virginia politics. Philip Barbour, for one, "declared that federal aid to internal improvements was for the sole benefit of the western states," and violated the principle "that the locale of the collection of the public contributions and the locale of their distribution should be the same."

Virginia leaders such as Madison, Monroe and Barbour helped kill federal aid to internal improvements, but the state program initiated in 1816 remained alive, in fact somewhat stimulated by the gradual demise of federal aid. In the early 1830's, Claudius Crozet expressed the conviction that the "delays and procrastinations" experienced in the early days of the movement were after all "productive of good . . . other states have displayed unexampled activity in it: Virginia will profit by the lessons of their experience." Pointing to Pennsylvania in particular, Crozet said that Virginia would learn from experience there "the embarrassment she would expose herself to, by a system of improvement too widely diffused." Elaborating upon this idea, he turned his line of argument to support state construction of all principal turnpikes.

rom the undertaking of state works. Although a better execution may be obtained, under the direction of the state, in the construction of canals and railroads, the objections arising from contending interests, may be urged against such a system with more than plausibility; and the wisdom of the system of a proportional subscription only on the part of the state, is every day more apparent: provided, however, that in such a case, the state exercise a sufficient superintendence over the works, through a Board of Public Works or other body, and their engineer . . .

As regards turnpikes, on the contrary, I think that those of a general character should be exclusively made by the state. My reasons for this opinion are as follows:

Their location and construction will generally be better.

The cost of roads being small compared to other improvements, they cannot lead into any embarrassing expenditures and loans.

Turnpikes undertaken by companies are generally of limited

Turnpikes undertaken by companies are generally of limited extent; not embracing a distant and extensive field of benefits, they are liable to be injured by new and more general turnpikes.

And if unprofitable, they are not kept in good repair, nor can companies be compelled to make such changes as the good of the community might require.

The tolls of individual companies cannot be conveniently regu-

lated to suit times and circumstances.

Frequently a general turnpike, extensively beneficial, will not be undertaken by a company, either for want of concert between distant points, or still more commonly, because it has to traverse a rugged and wild country, presenting a barrier which the government of the whole country can alone undertake to overcome.

Lastly, a turnpike may confer extensive benefits upon the community, which would give no return to the stockholders, and consequently it is properly the province of the government to undertake

it for the public good.

These were powerful arguments against the system of mixed enterprise, everyone of which was gradually to prove itself valid. Crozet, in a kind of Socratic manner, was constantly questioning established policy, irritating those who depended upon maintaining it. His technique was very often like that exemplified in the preceding quotation: to give the briefest lip service to established policy, then to dissect it bit by bit until there was little or nothing left. In this instance, all that remained for the mixed enterprise system, in Crozet's view, were the shorter turnpikes, and he doubted if even those would be well organized by private enterprise, into anything approximating a road system.

There were few settled opinions on this question, however, for even in the federal aid program set before Congress by Albert Gallatin, and in the debates on the Calhoun Bonus Bill after the War of 1812, there was a tendency to favor a system of mixed enterprise over a system of

direct government construction of internal improvements.

The location of roads across mountains could sometimes deceive the untrained. The direct line between points on opposite sides of a mountain might well be longer, when the necessary deflections had been made to furnish tolerable grades, than a road around the mountain. Crozet made a survey of Jackson's Mountain (1826), west of Staunton, and concluded that "though devious, the road—round the end of Jackson's mountain, is shorter than a well graduated road would be right over the same." Not far from that location, Engineer Peter Scales surveyed (1834) for a road between Huntersville and Warm Springs. He discovered that some of the local citizens "contended—that it would be more eligible to pass over the Big Back Creek Mountain, than to subject the travel to what they deemed an inadmissible increase of distance, incurred by running around its southern end." Scales proceeded to make a survey across the mountain along the old county road then in use, discovered grades as high as 15¼ degrees, and concluded that to relocate the road across the mountain with reasonable grades (Maximum: 3½ degrees) "would have called for several zigzags on the face of the mountain upon a north exposure—(increasing) the distance to an extent nearly equal, if not greater than the line now thrown around the end, upon easy grades, favorable ground and a good exposure."

upon easy grades, favorable ground and a good exposure."

Where the mountain ridge remained unbroken for miles, as is characteristic of the Blue Ridge, there was no choice between going over or around the mountain. A choice had to be made between alternative gaps that might be usable. Other things being equal, the gap nearest the direct line would be preferred, but other factors usually influenced the choice. For example, the General Assembly passed an act (1 March 1826) directing the Principal Engineer to survey the "shortest and best practicable route from Covington to Richmond." Five years later, having sandwiched this survey by bits and pieces in between a multitude of other duties, Crozet submitted his report. "The main difficulty in this business," he wrote, "is the passage of the Blue Ridge." East of Lexington there were four gaps in the range, two of which, White's Gap and Irish Gap, were definitely more favorable than

the other two, Indian Gap and Robertson's Gap. White's Gap was nearest the direct line, but having crossed this (going east), "it would require the crossing of the valley of Pedlar River and another high mountain beyond it." Irish Gap would require 390 feet more ascent than White's Gap, but the gap could be reached with a smaller grade, the streams on the eastern descent would all be headed, and there would be no additional mountain to cross. On the other hand, the descent on the slope east of Irish Gap involved an uninterrupted slope five miles long at a grade exceeding 4½ degrees, "to which should always be preferred alternate ascents and descents," to rest the horses, which the descent east of White's Gap allowed. All things considered, it amounted to a choice of the lesser evils, but so evil were the choices, concluded Crozet, "it appears that no advantage would be obtained by forcing a turnpike from Lexington, through either Irish or White's Gap, and that it would be better, in every respect, to intersect (from Lexington) the Staunton and James River turnpike at Waynesborough."

Once the line of the road had been surveyed by Crozet, or Scales, or another state-appointed engineer, there seemed to be no way the law could compel the turnpike officials to use the line recommended. Crozet and other engineers complained about this frequently to the Board of Public Works, and on at least one occasion, Crozet implied that the law

was defective. He wrote:

... persons not aware of the careful (sic) attention with which the different considerations which constitute a good road are balanced by the engineer who locates it, will not always appreciate his motives; and thus modifications are frequently made with the best intentions, which result, however, to the disadvantage of the road. It is only when steep grades or muddy places appear, that the error is, though too late, discovered. I cannot too often bring such instances to your notice, for unless the agency of the engineer is continued during the actual construction of the work, so far at least as to ensure an adherence to his instructions, his time, labour and experience, are of but little avail, and the purpose of the law which allowed his services to a particular company is in a great measure defeated.

Even the elaborate Valley Turnpike was not immune to the discovery of an error in location by the ubiquitous and perceptive Crozet. In this case the builders had exhibited "the usual partiality for long straight lines." Crozet was aware that this road had been in competent hands (those of Joseph R. Anderson), and was inclined to believe that the changes of location had been made for the purpose of saving the expense of paying damages to farmers along the line. "Farmers prefer straight fences very naturally to others, and frequently also, offer to relinquish damages on particular locations of their own choice." In complying with such proposals, the company might save damages, but in the end the road and the public would suffer. Crozet remarked that he had

. . . seen too many works injured by accommodating private interests, not to urge. . .the importance in all public works, to consult only the public interest, which is likewise that of the company, by a strict adherence to the best principles of location and construction; a departure from which very seldom fails to lead the company itself into greater expense than the original saving.

An indeterminate number of smaller turnpike companies and at least one large-scale project (the Cumberland Gap and Price's Turnpike

Road) were ruined by mistakes made in the location.

In company with the other states of the eastern seaboard, Virginia faced the problem of improving her own transportation facilities. Considering the extent and the physical character of her terrain, the problem was much greater than was generally realized. Her reliance upon the mixed enterprise system, and the meager funds and weak administrative body for implementing it, were evidences of a failure to recognize the

scope of the problem. If the Virginia Legislature rejected federal aid because the state had developed already a satisfactory program, the effectiveness of this program was to be demonstrated repeatedly throughout the decades to come. Changes were made from time to time, but the right formula for producing a good system of improved roads was never discovered during the turnpike era, because the turnpike itself was basically unsound.

AT THE SPRING MEETING OF THE ROCKBRIDGE HISTORICAL SOCIETY, THE FOLLOWING PROGRAM WAS PRESENTED UNDER THE ABLE DIRECTION OF MISS MARY MONROE PENICK:

JOHN ALEXANDER GRAHAM

1895 - 1947
A.B., Washington and Lee, 1914
Member of the faculty, 1919-1947
JOHN GRAHAM — composer, teacher, poet, wit, amicus musicae extraordinarius, founded the department of Fine Arts at Washington and Lee; taught its first courses in the appreciation of music; directed the Glee Club for seventeen years; composed and arranged works for the Troubadours, the Madrigal Club, the Presbyterian Choir (many of these works are now published and have been performed by major choral societies of the country), and for the joy of creation; fostered among students and townspeople a lasting interest in the art and practice of music.

#### THE ROCKBRIDGE HISTORICAL SOCIETY presents

A Program of Music by John A. Graham April 28, 1958 - 8:00 p.m. DuPont Hall Auditorium

Introductory Remarks .....

George J. Irwin

A Carol (1931) Lizette Woodworth Reese Sing We With Mirth (1933) Robert Southwell

The Choir of the Presbyterian Church Helen Wood, soloist

Mary Monroe Penick, director

Pavane pour une belle amitie' de'funte (1938)

Two Short Pieces (1943):

Consecutive Sevenths for a Consistent First Twelve Harsh Measures Taken Against the Piano James G. Leyburn, pianist

III Madrigals for mixed voices

The Silver Swan All Through the Night Turn Ye To Me

Quartet (a la' Gilbert and Sullivan)

Barbara Harding, Helen Coughlin - Sopranos Winifred Cushing, Virginia Munday — Altos Gordon Howell, Charles Layne — Tenors Graham Meredith, Edward S. Graves — Bass Madrigal Group of Lynchburg Caleb Cushing, director

## MINUTES OF JULY 25, 1958 MEETING

The regular summer dinner meeting of the Rockbridge Historical Society was held at the Tribrook Country Club with the vice-president, Mrs. J. P. Alexander of Fairfield, presiding.

Leyburn of Lexington, gave the invocation. Immediately following the dinner, Mrs. Alexander welcomed the guests and stated that Dr. Charles Turner, the president, who was spending the summer in Europe, regretted that he had to miss the meeting. She gave an official expression of appreciation to Mrs. William Lewis Burks and Mrs. Mohbray Baker of and Lexington Garden Clubs for Natural Bridge flower arrangements; to Mrs. Gordon Heiner who planned the program and Mrs. George Wiltshire for arranging the meeting.

A short business meeting was held and Col. William Couper of Lexington, chairman of the Resolutions Committee, presented the follow-

ing memorial to Dr. W. Cole Davis.

May 1, 1958

TO WHOM IT MAY CONCERN, BE IT KNOWN THAT

At the time of the last meeting Dr. W. Cole Davis was on a trip to Venezuela. A native of this county, Dr. Davis served as President of the Rockbridge Historical Society for two years (1946-47) following extensive service in the Medical Corps of the United States Army, in private practice in New Jersey and as Post Surgeon at VMI.

En route home he reached Caracas, at a time of armed political upheaval, and there died on February 23rd, 1958, aged seventyfive, following an attack of pneumonia contracted while visiting a remote area of Venezuela.

The brevity of this summarization being inversely proportional

to the sincerity and esteem in which he is held causes us to propose that it be RESOLVED, that the Rockbridge Historical Society mourns the loss of this enthusiastic, efficient and dedicated member; it grieves with his host of friends; and it extends heartfelt sympathy to the survivors of his family - sister, widow, children and grand-children.

Wm. Couper Chairman of Resolutions Committee Rockbridge Historical Society

This resolution was accepted by the society and copies were sent

to relatives and it was published in the Lexington papers.

Mrs. P. L. Paxton, chairman of the Membership Committeee, presented the following new members; Mrs. B. Y. Fretwell, Buena Vista; Col. and Mrs. Thomas M. Barton, Lexington; Rev. and Mrs. Lloyd Craighill, Lexington; Major Alex H. Morrison, Lexington; Col. and Mrs. S. M. Heflin, Lexington; Mrs. Clothilde Lyttleton, Goshen; Mrs. A. J. Cook, Lexington; Mr. and Mrs. Richard Fletcher, Lexington; Mrs. Lewis S. Musgrove, Buena Vista; Mr. and Mrs. R. N. Latture, Lexington; and Mrs. Virginia Stover Smith, Lexington.

Mr. Earl Paxton reported that his committee was working on the Archibald Alexander marker which is to be placed on Irish Creek and

Archibald Alexander marker which is to be placed on Irish Creek and

South River.

Immediately following this report the meeting was turned over to the program chairman Mrs. Gordon Heiner, who had the pleasure of introducing one of Lexington's most beloved and best known residents and attorneys, Matthew W. Paxton, whose address was:

## ZACHARIAH JOHNSTON OF AUGUSTA AND ROCKBRIDGE AND HIS TIMES

Each generation has probably concluded that it has seen greater events transpire and more history made than its preceding generations. As a speaker here recently pointed out, however, there have been periods in history when the world seemed on the march. Any listing of those periods should include the last half of the 18th century when the consciousness of power was being born in the people and being asserted through revolution. Certainly young America was on the march, and passing through its most vital, if not its most interesting period. A great nation was in the making. A struggle was on that called

for sturdy, rugged men and women.

Shortly before the beginning of this half century in the year 1744 in Augusta County, Va, was born Zachariah Johnston. His parents were Scotch-Irish from the North of Ireland, who sought religious freedom in America and emigrated to this section of the Valley among its first settlers. Before coming to Virginia, they stopped for a brief period in Northern New Hampshire. Little is known of Zachariah's father, William Johnston. He was with Colonel Washington in the Indian Wars, and he continued to maintain his good standing in the church as evidenced by the following letter of dismissal from one church to another dated June 1, 1747: "These are to certify that the bearer, William Johnston, and his wife, Anne, lived in the bounds of this congregation for the space of two years, and was received into Christian privileges, and at this departure from us, free of all public scandal or church censor known to us."

Augusta County was then the frontier of the white settlements. It was a buffer against the Indians for the older settlements east of the mountains. Into this land of hardships and danger, but born of a hardy stock, came the little Johnston boy. Within its borders he lived his comparatively short but useful life of 56 years, crowding into that brief space a multitude of activities, the rearing of a large family, acquiring and managing a large estate, and performance of valuable services to his county and state. And when he died, he was buried within the shadow of his native mountains not more than forty miles from where he was

born.

The home of his youth was near Fishersville in what is now South River District of Augusta County. From there he attended Liberty Hall academy and later became one of the early Trustees of Washington College. His boyhood days passed without events worthy of being handed down, but it was not long after finishing his schooling that he made his personality felt among his fellow pioneer settlers, for in 1778, in the early part of the Revolution, he was sent to the Legislature from Augusta County. For the next fourteen years he continued to represent the County in this capacity and no one thought of opposing him. While Johnston's military life has been lost sight of in the larger view of his legislative career the records disclose he was active in the

While Johnston's military life has been lost sight of in the larger view of his legislative career, the records disclose he was active in the army. At the beginning of the Revolution he was made a member of Augusta's committee of safety and early in the struggle the records indicate he was mustered in as ensign of a company to fight the Indians. According to Chalkley, Johnston was sworn in as a captain of militia, August 20, 1777. In October, 1779, Captain Johnston's company was on the West Fork of the Monongohela as related in the Augusta Court Martial records. Chalkley gives declarations made by soldiers who asserted they fought in Captain Johnston's company at the battle of Jamestown in the summer of 1781 and at Williamsburg in 1782.

General Andrew Lewis who was in command at Point Pleasant, was commander of the Virginia army at Williamsburg from March to August, 1776, and it is thought probable that Johnston was with him there. General Lewis was more well known and had had more military experience than Washington, and was mentioned prominently as commander

of the Continental Armies.

Johnston also served much time on the Augusta court martial. A paragraph from Waddell's Annals of Augusta revealed him as a most conscientious judge: "By the militia court martial which sat at the courthouse (in Staunton) Oct. 24, 1780, six captains were fined 10 pounds each for not returning rolls of their respective companies. Zachariah Johnton, a member of the court, was one of the delinquents and forthwith paid his fine". The captain had probably been too busy in the field to take

care of his muster roll.

Tradition has handed it down that while he was a member of the legislature sitting at Charlottesville during Governor Jefferson's term, he exhibited such bravery during Tarleton's raid that he was presented with

a sword by his compatriots.

Johnston resigned his captaincy in February, 1782. While both a commissioned officer and a legislator, he was sought, however, for another office. On August 15, 1780, he was appointed a justice of the peace, his commission being signed by Governor Jefferson May 29, 1781. On February 19, 1782, however, he declined the appointment on the ground that he should first study law. The position of justice was of much importance and the justices sitting together constituted the county court. Few of them had any previous legal training and it is believed this stand by Johnston was unique.

He was accorded another signal honor by his locality in 1789 when he was chosen to represent the Botetourt district as a presidential elector to cast the vote of the district for General George Washington. This certificate signed by the sheriffs of the various counties, is still in the possession of the Johnston family.

Johnston was, as indicated, a man of a large family and large property. His wife was Ann Robertson of Augusta and they had eleven children. He had large land holdings in Augusta and in 1792 he moved to Rockbridge County and established his home. He bought from the Lapsley heirs two tracts of land aggregating 738 acres on Woods Creek, named for the Woods family who owned the present Sunnyside farm. Part of the land was bought by Joseph Lapsley from Benjamin Borden, the deed being recorded in Orange, and part from James McDowell, deed recorded in Augusta. On this property he completed in 1797 "Stone House" still occupied by his direct descendants of the Johnston name, Misses Ann and Susan Johnston. (DB C, page 232). An early Johnston place was called Providence Hill, hence the name of the new Johnston

In his will probated here in 1800, Johnston disposed of three plantations in Rockbridge, one in Augusta and large holdings in Kentucky, some of which he had purchased and some received for military services. These included a tract of 1000 acres and one-half interest in 14,000 acres. He also disposed of seven slaves, two stills, considerable livestock

and bonds. (WB 2 page 191).

Johnston is described by Alexander in Vol. I, the Princeton Magazine as "a man of sterling honesty and undoubted patriotism". He was said to excel in conversational powers, and before church services, "he would commonly have a large group around him listening to his discourse". Quoting again from Alexander: "It was a common report that he was never seen to smile. Whether this was true I cannot tell, but being present when the students of the academy (as was then common) acted a ludicrous farce, while the rest of the audience was convulsed with laughter, Zachariah Johnston was not observed to relax a muscle of his face". He is described by Hugh Blair Grigsby in the Washington College papers as a "man of religious temperament, of great simplicity of manner and utterly void of hypocrisy and deceit".

While Zachariah Johnston was uniformly a serious minded man, he was not altogether devoid of a sense of humor. On one occasion, the governor of Virginia was dining at the Johnston home. A fat turkey sat on the platter before the host and without waiting for the host to carve, the governor took the knife, reached over and cut off a large portion and deposited it on his own plate. Whether he sought to embarrass his host or had some other motive is not known, but the host was equal to the occasion, and passing the platter to the next guest exclaimed:

"Help yourself, governor fashion."

An interesting slant on the character of the man and the trends and customs of the times is given in the correspondence still in possession of his descendants. It is not at all voluminous, but is enlightening. Letters were not written as frequently then and had to be delivered by hand, and

they usually concerned matters of some import.

It can be inferred from his letters that Johnston was a good trader and business man and fearless in upholding his side of a bargain. Litigation was more common then than now and he seemed to have had his share of it, much of it relating to his Kentucky real estate. John Marshall and Edmund Randolph were his counsel in some business matters.

January 3, 1780, he is quite vehement in writing to some unnamed party relative to a trade involving a beehive and a slave. Claiming he had been injured in the deal he writes: "Through you knew to the nicest proportion what I had lost, you had in some measure unjustly gained, yet you seem without sense of feeling of my case, looking with the blinded eyes of self-interest. Noting that human laws have annexed human penalties to keep one "from violently robbing another of their property and becoming destroyers of each other," he reminds the poor fellow of "another law which ought to receive an equal if not a superior regard. It says do to all men as you would that they should do to you, a witness to the observance of which you and I shall carry into another world with us where honor, riches or whatever else gained at the expense of a good conscience will give but an unpleasing reflection". This document closes in a militant fashion, "Now if there is any more I am, Sir, not anything afraid to subscribe myself to these lines and stand over them to your face any day if you want any further explanation."

He was, however, not averse to fair compromise, and in a letter of January 30, 1779, he expresses "from a desire of friendship" to settle a suit he had brought against another party by arbitration, "but, Sir", he says, "if it is agreeable to you to have it determined by each of us choosing a man acquainted with the law \* \* \* and thereby put an end to all foundation of debate, both between us and ours after us—if the idea of friendship is agreeable to you, let me immediately know the method that you think most likely to effect that desirable purpose \* \* \* I have dipt my pen with desires of unity and friendship".

The letters show an affectionate relationship between members of the

large family though in one instance he does not hesitate to use strong language to one of his sons about his conduct. He held his wife in the highest affection and esteem, but undertook also to admonish her in following the teachings of the Scriptures. While in Richmond at the legislature, he writes her: "Remember the gracious Redeemer's solemn advice, search the Scriptures, for in them ye think ye have eternal life. \* \* \* I beg you be not among the unhappy number that in our day refuse Him a room in their heart and thoughts \* \* \* Recommending you to Him I conclude and subscribe myself yours till death shall dissolve every natural obligation". Immediately after this admonition that must have made a deep impression, there follows the homely observance: "N. B. I have not the satisfaction to inform you when I shall set from this place. Give my respects to my friends and neighbors. Butter sells very well \* \* \* It sells at 7 cents per pound, but I expect it cannot continue at that price".

We can, therefore, create a man of rather serious trend of mind, deeply religious, interested in the things of his day, with little sense of humor, devoted to his family and direct and fearless in his dealings. That he, like his father stood well in matters relating to the church can be seen from the letter transferring his memberhip from his Augusta church to Rockbridge—"We do certify that Captain Z. Johnston, his wife, Ann, his sons, John and Zachariah, and his daughter, Elizabeth, are in full communion and free from moral blot known to us. The remainder of his communion and free from moral blot known to us. The remainder of his juniors are of fair and unblemished standing in this place. Signed by

advice of session, May 21, 1792. J. McCue".

Zachariah Johnston, ambitious for his children, sent his son, John Johnston, to Philadelphia to study medicine and the letters from son to father show a deep filial affection and gratitude and some are exceedingly interesting, relating to first hand knowledge of the happen-

ings of the times.

May 4, 1790, John writes his father of his arrival in Philadelphia where board was obtained at 40 pounds year. "The great demand for wheat and flour in Europe has augmented the price of boarding very much in this place", he writes," \* \* \* I am at present confined to my room with that infectious disease the Small Pox". A year later we hear more about small pox at the time when vaccine was in its trial stages. "I have had a very clear proof of the utility or happy effects of inoculation", he says, "This spring we inoculated 300 odd patients without the loss of one. We attended 35 that took it in the natural way and of that small number, twelve died". "Nothing speaks so forcibly as facts. The great and eminent Dr. Rhann in last course of lectures on Theory and practice of Physics told us that he had inoculated 2000 and had lost only one"

On July 6, 1790, John gives an account of the celebrating in Philadel-

phia of Independence Day, then 13 years old:

"The 4th of this Instant was the anniversary of the American Independence, that ever memorable period to the true sons of patriotism. The patriots in this place celebrated it in the most splendid manner. The Society of Cincinnati met at the state house and after congratulating each other on its return, marched in procession to Christ Church. The great Doctor Smith delivered a very suitable sermon \* \* \* the day everywhere was celebrated with unfeigned joy, the companies of artillery fired several salutes in honor of the morning, the bells over the whole city rang, fire works were exhibited at the state house and many other grand exhibitions"

"Today's paper", he continues, "informs us the temporary residence of Congress is to be in Philadelphia, and the permanent seat somewhere

on the banks of the Potomac"

Among the most interesting documents in the possession of his descendants are a number of original letters written to Zachariah Johnston by men whose names loom large in history, George Mason, John Marshall, James Monroe, Edmund Randolph and Thomas Jefferson. I quote a brief letter from Jefferson, whose strong supporter Johnston was:

Monticello, Oct. 7, 1790.

Dear Sir:

As the assembly will soon meet, I presume you will be passing down to it a few days before. I shall be at home at that time and will always be glad to see you here when I am here; but particularly I wish it at this time, as it is highly interesting to our country that it should take up a particular matter now in its power, and which will never be so again. This subject can only be opened in private conference. Knowing the weight you have justly acquired with our public councils, and your zeal to promote the public interests, I have taken the liberty of asking to see you on your way down. My house will be a convenient stage for you the first day, and if you can have time to tarry a day with us, it will be very desirable to me, and I trust not unfruitful for our state in general and our particular part of it. I am with great esteem Dear Sir

Your most obedt. humble sev't.

T. J. Jefferson. Johnston's will is among the most revealing of his preserved writings. It is recorded in Rockbridge County Clerk's Office in Will Book 2,

page 101. It reflects the religious spirit of the testator and the quaint language of the wills of that period. Its preamble is as follows:

"In the name of God, Amen. I, Zachariah Johnston of Rockbridge and State of Virginia, being sick and weak of body, enjoying still soundness in a great degree of mind and judgment, thanks be unto God, because I now have in mind the mortality of my body and knowing

that it is appointed for all men once to die, do make and ordain this, my last will and testament, viz—In the first place I give and recommend my soul unto the hands of Almighty God who gave it, and my body I recommend to be buried in a decent Christian manner at the discretion of my executor, nothing doubting I shall receive the same again at the general resurrection, and as touching such worldly estate as it hath pleased God to bless me with in this life, I give and devise in the following manner and form"

The chief historical interest in Zachariah Johnston today lies in his record in the legislature and as a member of the Virginia convention of 1788 that ratified the Federal Constitution. In these bodies he was closely associated with many of the greatest men the state and nation ever produced. Among these his position seems to have been much res-pected. Alexander in the Princeton Magazine, says of Johnston the

'Among the distinguished Virginians brought out by the American Revolution was Zachariah Johnston, a plain farmer of Augusta, who had received no other education than what a common English school could afford. When "Committees of Safety" were appointed in every district, he was by the recommendation of his neighbours, made a member of the committee for his native county. In this office he discovered so much good sense, and such ability to express his opinions with clearness and force, that he was persuaded to become a candidate for a seat in the Virginia legislature. When he entered that body, no one expected that a plain, uneducated farmer would undertake to make speeches on the same floor with many of the greatest men whom the state ever produced, but Johnston, conscious of his own power, was not long a member before he astonished the whole house by delivering on an important occasion a speech without embarrassment, in which he exhibited his views with the utmost perspicuity and energy. No man in the Assembly was more fluent or expressed himself in more proper language than Zachariah Johnston. He did not speak often, but when important subjects were brought before the house, he commonly delivered at least one speech and no man in the Assembly unless we except Patrick Henry commanded the attention of the members in a greater degree than the backwoods farmer.

"The people of the Valley or country west of the Blue Ridge, being of a different stock, and of different habits and manners from the Old Virginians, who were of English descent, have always manifested some jealousy, because in the laws enacted there frequently was not an impartial regard to their interests, and Johnston being a representative of this region, when any subject touching the interests of his constituents came up, was always ready with uncompromising firmness to defend their cause. The people of the Valley were proud of their champion, as well they might be. What gave force to his eloquence was his pure and incorruptible integrity."

Johnston early allied himself with the policies of Mr. Jefferson in the shaping of the new government. Quoting from an article in Washington

College Historical papers by Hugh Blair Grigsby about Johnston: "He entered the house of delegates during the Revolution and gave up all his faculties to the purpose of shaping the new measures to a Republican model. He accordingly supported with great earnestness the revised bills reported by Mr. Jefferson which it was the policy of their opponents to keep on the table, or, if called up, to emasculate them of their wisest provisions. It is well known that Mr. Jefferson, after he withdrew from the house to embark for France, left the care of the revised bills to Mr. Madison who fully redeemed the confidence of his friend by the tact and patience and ability which he displayed in effecting their passage. He had indeed most strenuous coadjutors, and among them was Zachariah Johnston. His simple and unadorned but caustic and fearless logic, which was in strong contrast with the deep and elaborate speculations of Mr. Madison, was always ready and effective".

Although many important matters engaged Johnston's attention during his long tenure of office in the legislature, his name there is linked chiefly with Virginia's celebrated act of religious freedom.

The oppressions of the established church were very real still in the minds of these freedom loving people, and although the first session of the legislature in October, 1776, had forbidden punishment for dissenters and abolished church levies, the Episcopal or former established church could still tax to fulfill old obligations and continued to hold the glebe lands and church properties. Johnston was opposed to all of these things, not for sectarian reasons but in principle, and fought a bill to incorporate the Episcopal church and assess church taxes in 1784. His fight was unsuccessful, but in 1785 he was on a subcommittee that reported a bill repealing the former bill and won its adoption. This latter bill declared the glebe lands belonged to the people of the state and not a particular denomination and ordered them sold.

It is interesting to note that a memorial from Rockbridge citizens was read before the 1784 session opposing the church assessment bill, indicating that this was the sentiment of the Valley people.

The religious issue continued to hold the forefront in proceedings of the next general assembly, that of 1785. There were many able and prominent men in this house of delegates. Because of the important role Zachariah Johnston had evidently taken in the deliberations of the former session, he was made chairman of the standing committee on religion. In the language of the historical reports, "Zachariah Johnston, the unflinching friend of religious freedom, presided in the committee of religion; John Tyler in the committee of privileges and elections; Carter Henry Harrison in the committee of propositions and grievances; James Madison in the committee of courts of justice; Richard Lee in the committee of claims; and Carter Braxton in the committee of commerce". This list is indicative of the men with whom Zachariah Johnton was serving in the legislature.

The ever memorable act of the 1785 session was the bill for establishing religious freedom. It was passed on December 17. It was written by James Madison and reported from Johnston's committee. The house passed the bill by a majority of 54 votes, and Zachariah Johnston spoke strongly for the bill. Only one paragraph of this speech is preserved, but it throws light on the character of the man: "Mr. Chairman, I am a Presbyterian, a rigid Presbyterian as we are called; my parents before me were of the same profession; I was educated in that line. Since I became a man I have examined for myself and I have seen no cause to dissent. But sir, the very day that the Presbyterians shall be established by law and become a body politic, the same day Zachariah Johnston will become a dissenter. Dissent from that religion I cannot in honesty,

but from that establishment I will"

This act is still familiar to us and constitutes Section 34 of the Code of Virginia. It ended forever any doubt as to free religious thought

and terminated all questions as to taxation for the support of the church.

Thus Zachariah Johnston, a strict Presbyterian by descent and by choice, whose forebears had suffered persecution for free thought, was the spokesman for the Valley on this subject. He truly represented the sentiment of a frontier country that even under the crown had refused to submit to the injunctions of the established order in religion and his name comes down as the champion of the Virginia Bill of Religious Freedom.

With reference to Johnston's legislative service, which continued uninterrupted from 1778 to 1792, an amusing incident has come down to us. He had arisen and addressed the chair: "Mr. Speaker, I conceive", and discussed the topic at length. During the course of his remarks he used the same expression several times, and as he sat down, a fellow member arose and remarked: "Mr. Speaker, the gentleman from Augusta has conceived three times and brought forth nothing".

The Virginia convention to ratify the Federal Constitution met in

Richmond June 2, 1788. While the necessary nine states had ratified before Virginia acted, the size and influence of the state made the convention of much importance, and it was feared she might force amendments to the paper prior to ratification. Grave fears were felt

as to the outcome in the state, and they were well founded.

Under the articles of confederation, the powers of the purse, sword and of commerce were reserved to the states. Washington's soldiers as a rule followed his lead and favored ratification, but the statesmen who had guided the destinies of Virginia through her struggle for independence, sought first of all to safeguard this independence and arose in opposition to the constitution. Feeling that the public liberties were threatened, they girded themselves again for war.

The Federal Constitutional Convention that had completed its task eight months before had been called to amend the articles. Instead they brought in an entirely new system of government. Hugh Blair Grigsby terms the 25 days of the Virginia convention the most animated parliamentary tournament of the 18th Century in America. There were 170 members in the convention, two from each county. Archibald Stuart and Zachariah Johnston represented Augusta and Andrew Moore and William McKee, Rockbridge.

Edmund Pendleton, president of the Supreme Court and friend of the new constitution, was unanimously elected president of the convention. Patrick Henry was the leading spirit in the opposition. He was then 52 years old and his fiery oratory was at its best. While addressing the house, it is said he would become so excited that at times he would reach up and turn his wig round and round on his head. He was ably supported by George Mason, then 62, James Monroe 30, William Grayson, Tyler and others. Lined up against them and in favor of ratification were Edmund Randolph, then governor of Virginia, George Wythe, John Marshall and James Madison, both in the vigor of youth, Pendleton, Henry Lee, Nicholas and others. Much of the fight was centered on an attempt to adopt amendments prior to ratification of the constitution, and as the great debate went on day after day, Henry would sway the emotions to be answered by the cold logic of Madison; Monroe would be responded to by Randolph and Henry Lee.

From the debates of the proceedings of the convention taken in shorthand by David Robertson of Petersburg, it appears that Zachariah Johnston spoke before the convention Wednesday, June 25, the last day of debate and the day the vote was taken. Only one member from the Valley had spoken. Quoting from the official newspaper records:

Stephen was succeeded by a member who had not yet participated in debate, but who, as a representative of the Valley, was listened to with profound respect. Zachariah Johnston came from Augusta, a county which had been distinguished by the valor of its sons in the Indian wars, especially at Point Pleasant, and in the Revolution \* \* \*. The dangers which the people of the Valley had most to apprehend were from the Indians \* \* \*Hence a strong and energetic government which might bring at any moment the military resources of the Union to bear upon the Indians had in itself nothing unpleasing in the sight of Valley people.

\* \* It was plain that the opponents of (the constitution) regarded the Valley delegation with alarm. It was mainly composed of men who had seen hard military service and were devoted to Washington \* \* \*.

"In this state of apprehension respecting the opinion of the members of the Valley, the words of Johnston were closely watched. Of the sentiments held by others, however, he said nothing but in a few sentences removed all doubt about his own. After presenting some remarks appropriately introduced respecting the nature and value of government, and offering a deserved compliment to Pendleton, he discussed, concisely and clearly, the legislative department, and pointed out its fine adaptation, in his opinion to attain the end in view. He approved the provisions touching the militia, which, as the father of a

large family, he regarded with caution; saw no danger to religious freedom, or fear from direct taxation, and defended the irregularities of the new system by an illustration drawn from the number of fighting men in the county of Augusta and in the county of Warwick, and argued that the representation in the House of Representatives was more equal and more just than in our own House of Delegates. He saw full responsibility in the houses of Congress. Men would not be wicked for nothing, and when they became wicked, we would turn them out. When the members of Congress knew that their own children would be taxed, there was sufficient responsibility. He animadverted sternly on the amendments brought forward by the opponents of the new scheme. They had left out the most precious article in the bill of rights. The constitution, he admitted, might have defects; but where do the annals of the world show us a perfect constitution? He closed his remarks by a novel and well drawn parallel between the condition of the British people, who, when they had overthrown monarchy, were unable to govern themselves, and had in despair called Charles the Second to the throne, and the condition of our own country, warning the members of the fate which might overtake them, if, by rejecting the Constitution, they became involved in disunion and anarchy.'

A paragraph or two from Johnston's speech will bear quoting:
"It is my lot to be among the poor people. The most that I can claim or flatter myself with is to be of the middle rank. I wish no more for I am contented. But I shall give my opinion unbiased and uninfluenced—without erudition or eloquence, but with firmness and candor. And in so doing, I will satisfy my conscience. If this constitution be bad, it will bear equally hard on me as on any member of the society. It will bear hard on my children who are as dear to me as any man's children can be to him. Having their felicity and happiness at heart, the vote I shall give in its favor can only be imputed to a conviction of its utility

and propriety"

Johnston's views on slavery expressed in this speech are of particular interest. On this point he said, "They tell us that they see a progressive danger of bringing about emancipation. The Principle has begun since the Revolution. Let us do what we will it will come round. Slavery has been the foundation of that impiety and dissipation which have been so much disseminated among our countrymen. If it were totally

abolished it would do much good."

Only Henry and Randolph followed Johnston briefly and the momentus

vote was taken. It was a vote on prior amendments and in reality the decisive vote. The right to amend prior to ratification was lost by a margin of eight votes and Virginia had ratified the constitution.

It is interesting to note from the Washington College papers that the votes of Thomas Lewis, William Fleming, Archibald Stuart, Zachariah Johnston, Andrew Moore and William McKee, members from the Valley and all trustees of Washington College, secured the ratifica-tion. Without their votes that instrument would have been rejected by the state. Grigsby says that Andrew Moore and William McKee, the representatives from Rockbridge, had been instructed to oppose the constitution and had disobeyed their instructions, but this is thought doubtful. It is true, however, that William Graham, the rector of Liberty Hall, was opposed to ratification and presuming Zachariah Johnston was also opposed, in a letter of Nov. 3, 1787, still in existence, he asked Johnston as to suggestions for defeating the ratification and proposed that they publish a pamphlet. He had misjudged his man, however. After removing to Rockbridge County in 1792, Zachariah Johnston

practically withdrew from public life, although he represented the county for one term in the Legislature, 1797-98, and at one time considered running for Congress. His health was not good and he devoted his last years to building up and caring for his new Rockbridge home, looking after his family and mingling with his friends.

Beneath the great spreading white oak in the Lexington cemetery that

still stands near the spot where the old Presbyterian Church stood when Johnston was buried, is a simple sand stone that bears the follow-

ing quaint inscription:

"Here lies the body of Zachariah Johnston, who died Jan. 7, 1800, in the 57th year of his life. Death thou hast conquered me, I, by thy dart am slain. But Christ has conquered thee And I shall rise again".

MINUTES OF OCTOBER 27, 1958 MEETING

The Rockbridge Historical Society held its autumn meeting in the

auditorium of the Virginia Military Institute Library.

In a brief business session before the speaker was introduced, Mr. Earl Paxton representing the monuments committee, displayed the bronze plaque to Archibald Alexander which the Society had authorized to be cast and erected.

A large group of members and guests had gathered to hear an interesting and informative talk by Dr. William Bean on the life of "Sandie" Pendleton, a son of Lexington who served as General Stonewall Jackson's aide during the Civil War and who, before his own death in action, following Jackson's, became one of the most highly-regarded young

Confederate officers

Dr. Bean, whose biography of young Pendleton is to appear shortly, recounted some of his exploits in battle and cited Jackson and others in illustrating the high regard they had for his abilities. Another phase of the young officer's career, his courtship and marriage to young Maria Corbin, was also recounted by Dr. Bean.

Dr. Bean's book has since been published entitled JAKSON'S MAN,

SANDIE PENDLETON.

MINUTES OF EXECUTIVE COMMITTEE MEETING-JAN, '59

A called meeting of the Executive Committee of the Rockbridge County Historical Society was held January 12 on the mezzanine of the Robert E. Lee Hotel. Present were Dr. Charles Turner, Miss Ellen Anderson, Mrs. George Wiltshire, Col. William Couper, Mr. Earl K. Paxton, Mrs. Charles McCulloch and Maj. Chester Goolrick.

Dr. Turner reported that the date for the winter meeting had been selected as January 27 and that Mr. Stuart Moore would deliver a talk

on old Lexington land company operations.

Mr. Paxton reported that the Society's marker for Archibald Alexander was ready and could be erected at any time that the exact location could be agreed upon. Several members of the committee volunteered to help Mr. Paxton in making a choice. The work will cost approximately \$25.00.

Announcement was made that papers of Miss Maude Houston have

been given to the Society.

Mrs. Harry Padgett, representing the County Council of Garden Clubs. was a guest at the meeting and presented detailed plans for the proposed planting and restoration work for the gardens at "The Castle". While the bulk of the work is to be undertaken as a memorial gift, the council will supervise and do the rest. Mrs. Padgett asked only that, once the work is completed, the Historical Society agree to see that the gardens be kept up. The committee accepted her proposals with thanks and it was moved and seconded that the Society see that the gardens are

The membership committee reported that there had been an increase of 27 new members in the past year.

The address of Mr. Stuart Moore:

#### GREATER LEXINGTON — 1890

The weary, footsore Confederate soldier, returning to his beloved Valley of Virginia in that fateful spring of 1865, found a land desolated by four years of war, far from a soothing prospect in the dejection of defeat. The lower Valley presented a scene of devastation from the marching and countermarching of friend and foe. The upper Valley from Staunton southward had suffered less from the tramping of armies and the burning of barns than from sheer neglect while its man-power

was occupied elsewhere.

Here the farms were choked with weeds or lying infertile, without the tools or machinery to bring them back to usefulness, the farm animals had strayed or starved or been eaten, the shops showed little but empty shelves, and the only evidence of wealth was the plentiful supply of Confederate dollars of no value whatsoever. It was a dismal home-coming for many, if not for most, to a land without food, currency, or much of anything from which to make a livelihood.

Fortunately for those who were to follow them, it was not in the nature of these sturdy young men to accept bitterness and brooding as the fruit of their vain and valiant effort; and in the traditional American manner they set about restoring their shabby homes, clearing and planting their neglected fields, and taking up various small enterprises which held out a promise of sustenance, if not quite prosperity.

Not all were equipped by character or circumstance for the task of beating their swords into plowshares—never as easy a transformation as the copy books would have us believe. Some were content to rest upon their hard earned laurels and to get along after a fashion with the little the gods provided; but, in general, the high courage developed in war carried over into the unsettled peace which followed, and farming and small local industry became the hope of the new day.

For the first decades after Appomattox, the South licked its wounds. made brick without straw, ate sparsely, and found its small relaxation by dozing in the sun. Little towns and large farms became somewhat self-sufficient from necessity, lacking the means of transportation and communication. There was little opportunity for the hustling and the striving for progress and expansion which were to characterize the 'booms' of the nineties.

This somnolent state of meagre acceptance could not last forever, and as the Sleeping Beauty of the nursery tale was rescued by Prince Charming, so the South was awakened from its slumber by a knight in shining armor, a new invasion—this time, Yankees with dollars instead of with guns. A new nation had been forged out of the war, and was acutely aware of its growing pains. While the South was impoverished by war much of the North had become rich and prosperous as the result of wartime industry, of railroad building, of foreign trade, and of the growing demand for the better things of life; and this new money began to seek new ventures.

Northern men of means had tramped or ridden over much of the South and had scented out its great untapped natural resources. They made overtures to their late foes, and in the eighties railroads, mining, and metal industries began to be located and developed, with Northern capitalists and hungry Southerners united in projects of many kinds.

Thus, within a scant quarter century the fires of hope began to burn along the Blue Ridge, the prejudices of the late conflict were buried in a sudden common desire for easy wealth, and Blue and Gray commingled in a new found cordiality. There was great coming and going of industrialists, capitalists, promoters and engineers from New York, Philadelphia, Baltimore, Louisville, Richmond, and other centers of money and enterprise, and by the year 1890 a new and feverish life had been injected into the sleepy Valley of Virginia. Even Ben Butler, the execrated villain of New Orleans memory, made a tour of the South with a view to investment in its opportunities, to the accompaniment of newspaper adjurations that he was not to be spat upon, since he brought the promise of new gold, a commodity rare enough in the conquered South of that day.

Atlanta with its railroads and Birmingham with its iron and steel

mills were two great focal points of industrial and commercial expansion. In the upper South, the Valley of Virginia received primary attention because of its natural resources, its expanses of timber, its rich veins of ore, its tumbling streams of water, and its newly reaching railroads. Front Royal, Waynesboro, Salem and Big Lick (now Roanoke) were jewel names in the rosary of cities which were to string along the great valley and light up the Virginia skies. Closer home, Goshen, Glasgow and Green Forest (later Buena Vista) began to appear as checker-boards on the map of Rockbridge County. Blast furnaces, railroad shops, steel mills were the basic enterprises which were to draw their raw materials from the surrounding hills and shape these into supplies for an expanding nation.

Lexington was the center of much activity in the development of these embryo cities of our neighborhood. In the course of this industrial marriage of convenience the Yankees had the 'know-how' and the money, while the Confederates were endowed with the naked land and its mineral, timber and water-power resources. In the planning and development of Glasgow, Buena Vista and other settlements, local men took active parts, and the hotels and inns of Lexington were taxed to and beyond capacity to accommodate the streams of visitors. The new cities existed then, as many of them do now, largely on paper, and were without hotels, banks, stores or other facilities for the sudden burst of activity which swirled about Lexington, without then touching it.

The Buena Vista Company was headed by A. T. Barclay, a successful farmer and business man, and a trustee of Washington and Lee Uni-

versity. At Glasgow, Fitzhugh Lee was head of the Rockbridge Company, and the Glasgow Improvement Company enlisted John DeHart Ross as its president and others interested were E. Morgan Pendleton, J. McD. Adair, W. S. Hopkins, Frank T. Glasgow, John C. Boude and A. L. Nelson. The West End Glasgow Land Company was under the direction of Greenlee D. Letcher, aided by W. B. F. Leech and other local citizens. Goshen was largely promoted by men from Staunton and the lower Valley, but Lexington men were actively engaged in the other nearby developments and acquired a taste for quick profits.

The 'boom' was on, and land and money changed hands with amazing rapidity. Large areas of pasture, wood-land, farms and mountains were cross-hatched with streets and boulevards extending further than the eye could reach, and forming, on maps at least, almost a continuous chain of cities along the foot-hills of the mountains. New industries moved in, blast furnaces reddened the sky at night, and unbelievable prosperity, riches beyond calculation, was at hand.

The story is told of Thomas S. White that while busy selling Buena

Vista lots a friend dashed in to tell him his team of horses had broken loose and was running away. "Let them go", said the ebullient Mr. White,

"I'm making a horse a minute here".

In the midst of all this surrounding excitement of turning scrabbly acres into fabulous dollars, it is small wonder that the sedate old town of Lexington was eventually caught up in the fever .Late in the year 1890, while other boom ventures were still flourishing, the Lexington Development Company was formed. Two of its charter members were men from Baltimore, but its local sponsors were in general those who were prospering in the Glasgow boom, and these included J. D. H. Ross as its president, with A. L. Nelson, Thomas S. White, Henry H. Myers, and J. McD. Adair.

The company received its charter at the hands of the local court on October 20, 1890, and immediately launched the sale of its stock. The office of the Company was located at the home of Miss Baxter on North Main Street, opposite the Central Hotel. Its capital stock was fixed at a maximum of \$600,000, divided into shares of the par value of \$10 each. Payment of the stock was to be in five installments, with the understanding that the last one or two calls might not be made in event

lot sales justified foregoing these.

The elaborate map of the Company's properties, found in the Clerk's Office of Rockbridge County in Deed Book 76, envisions a far flung city of proportions which completely dwarf the old town of Lexington, shown as its nucleus. On its western side it embraced most of the land extending to the Brushy Hills, now known as "Sunnyside" (the Webster Farm), Honeysuckle Hill, Castle Hill and the old golf course (the George H. Denny property), and the Mulberry Hill and White Farm, extending to Cave Spring and the North (now Maury) River. This was to furnish some industrial sites along Woods Creek and North River, but in general was to constitute the better living quarters for the thousands who would pour into the new city. East of Lexington, across North River, was another area equally large, taking in the Nelson and Alexander lands, extending back from the river for some distance, below the site of the old covered bridge, and the Davidson lands east of the old railroad 'Y'. These latter were obviously to be dedicated to factory sites and the homes of factory workers. Old Lexington was to be the business, civic and educational center of this great new city.

The project was enthusiastically supported and cheered on by the local newspapers. The Rockbridge County News of October 23, 1890,

said in its editorial column:

"It is with a feeling of sincere gratification that we today record Lexington's great awakening. The old town has aroused from her lethargy, she has caught the spirit of the times, and is girding up her loins to march to the front and take her place among the most vigorous and prosperous towns of the land." and went on to remark:

"Lexington has long been walled in by old estates. These lands are now available."

It needs to be noted in passing that these old estates, which had been accused of blocking Lexington's progress, were largely owned by the promoters of the Company or by their families. Colonel Ross had acquired "Sunnyside" and a part of the Mulberry Hill estate, H. H. Myers and William A. Anderson held lands along Woods Creek, while Captain James J. White, a brother of Thomas S. White, who was active in the Company, owned the rest of Mulberry Hill including what is known as the White Farm of over 500 acres. A. L. Nelson held a considerable acreage on the east bank of North River, and these areas were sold the Company at prices ranging from \$175 to \$450 an acre. The promoters chalked up a substantial initial profit from turning over these lands to the Company.

Then it proceeded to open its stock books, and the mad rush was on. Under the caption, "\$100,000 Of Stock Taken In Two Hours" the Lex-

ington Gazette of October 30th, writes:

"The books of the Lexington Development Company were opened in the office of the Company at 9 a.m., October 23rd; as the clock struck eleven, the hundred thousand dollars of the stock allotted to this county had been taken. The rush for stock was so great that the Directors wisely determined to keep the books open so as to allow our people to invest \* \* The building is full of people clamoring for stock. With all the booms around us the like has never been seen before. Lexington started last in the race, but she is getting there all the same."

and in the County News of October 23rd:

'A continuous stream of humanity was passing in and out, and inside the building was a surging crowd eager to have their names

placed on the books."

Soon came the printed prospectus of the new company. After extolling the virtues of its location, scenery, pure air and water, and generally healthful surroundings, the circular points out the superior transportation prospects, as follows:

#### "RAILROAD FACILITIES"

"Lexington is the terminus of two great trunk lines of railroad, The Baltimore and Ohio and the Chesapeake and Ohio use a common track to a UNION DEPOT within the limits of the town. There are six passenger trains daily, giving easy and quick communication to all points East, West, North and South. The Shenandoah Valley Railroad (Norfolk and Western) is reached within eight miles by a rail

connection at Buena Vista.

The Virginia Western Railroad will be built to a connection with the Tennessee Midland Railroad, thus making a Grand Trunk Road from Lexington, Virginia, to Memphis, Tennessee. There is every reason to believe that the Pittsburgh and Glasgow railroad will soon cross the B. & O. at Lexington, thus giving a short and direct connection with that great center of iron consumption. The Cumberland Valley Railroad, which has reached Winchester in its progress up the Valley, is expected to give Lexington its fifth railroad in the very near future. Then will be fulfilled the prediction of John W. Garrett, late President of the B. and O. Railroad, "that Lexington, Virginia, will become one of the great railroad centers of the South."

The prospectus then proceeds:

"INDUSTRIES"

"There are already at Lexington, one of the best equipped woodworking mills in the State, a foundry with two cupolas, a machine shop with the latest iron working machinery complete, a chair factory doing a large and profitable business, a vegetable and fruit canning factory whose products stand at the very head of the market, two large flouring mills, one roller process and one using burrs, two corn mills and two plaster mills, and one ice factory, which supplies the neighboring towns, the Natural Bridge, the Rockbridge Alum Springs, the Rockbridge Baths, all within a few miles distance, with

the finest quality of manufactured ice."

Next are recounted the undeniable educational, ecclesiastical and historical advantages at hand; and under the head of Water Power we

read:

"WATER POWER"

"The North River, Woods Creek and Mill Creek run through the property of the Lexington Development Company, and furnish a magnificent water power, the cheapest of all powers. There are already five points at which this power is developed and utilized to drive machinery. It can be further indefinitely increased. Few towns are so gifted in this respect as Lexington."

(It is difficult in these days to reconcile the enthusiasm of the promoters with the power potentialities of the insignificant trickle we know as

Woods Creek.)

"PURPOSES OF THIS COMPANY"

"The Lexington Development Company has acquired about 1,275 acres of land lying immediately adjoining the town upon its western border, and along the railroad and river front at a cost of about \$300,000. Much of it is already improved with costly buildings, mill dams, canals, etc., and the rest finely adapted to the other purposes

of the Company.

The purpose of this Company is to prepare the lands for settlement by laying off and grading streets, dividing the land into suitable lots, providing a supply of pure spring water, building two hotels, giving sites and money help to such industries of the higher order employing the best class of skilled labor, as will assist in making Lexington the most beautiful and profitable city in the South to live in.

Raw material of every sort, water power and transportation are

at our doors, we can select the best and most profitable to work

upon. All our neighboring towns shall be tributary to us."

(It is notable that neither the promoters, nor the newspapers, nor the public made any mention of provision for the health and cultural welfare of the great population, for which hotels, dams, bridges and other profit-making enterprises were planned. The question of churches, schools, hospitals or other like agencies appears completely to have escaped attention in the great rush for quick profits.)

Plans for development of the Greater Lexington were in keeping with the unbounded optimism of the prospectus. The County News, in November 1890, urged a wide boulevard to belt the new area, with wide streets, a system of parks and open places, some what justifiably,

although with questionable metaphor, complaining:

"The present town is an ugly blot jutting out in

a sea of natural beauty.

In accordance with that suggestion, the plan called for a wide belt boulevard, a part of which was called 'Greenoke Street', to circle from the reservoir to Liberty Hall, thence to the river and around by Col. Alto. The Liberty Hall ruins and a ten acres tract had been reserved by Captain White in his sale to the Company, and the present Mulberry Hill tract and the Castle Hill hotel area were set apart as hotel sites and not subdivided into lots.

Before the close of the year 1890 it was voted to erect a \$60,000 hotel at Mulberry Hill, presumably involving the demolition of the old Andrew Reid residence, which fortuitously still stands. This hotel was to have access from the old town by a monstrous bridge of iron, constituting an extension of Washington Street through the University grounds. (That location would have been a short distance west of and upstream from the present concrete walkway bridge to Wilson Field,

but at a somewhat higher level.)

In the spring, however, the Mulberry Hill site was abandoned for hotel purposes, together with the elaborate and costly iron bridge. In a fit of strange caution, the Company concluded that one hotel would do for the present, and commenced the construction of Hotel DeHart, later known as Castle Hill, to be reached by low bridges over Woods

Creek above and below.

This sprawling, ornate structure embodied almost every conceivable type of architecture, from Moorish domes to Norman tower and battlements, but it was after all principally 'boom', a nightmarish structure common to developments of that period, of which the buildings of Southern Seminary at Buena Vista and of Fairfax Hall at Waynesboro are prototypes. Hotel DeHart, a mammoth hostelry of stone, brick and wood, was never opened as such, but remained boarded up and virginal for nearly two decades. From about 1908 until the early twenties it was used as a student dormitory and as a summer hotel, and was about to be converted to a boys' prep school, when it met its end in a spectacular early morning fire in September, 1922.

During the severe winter months there was little attempted in the way of lot sales. The project was awaiting completion of its map and layout of streets and lots. The great industrial expansion was still in its planning stage, and the in-rush of skilled workers had not materialized.

However, three companies were organized for the purpose of buying lots and erecting houses.

The Lexington Building Company under the aegis of Captain W. F. Pierson, later to be one of Lexington's mayors, purchased 200 lots at \$200 each, with the condition that it was to expend \$10,000. in the erection of residences within four years. Samuel W. Sterrett and other citizens of Highland County formed the Highland Investment Company and purchased a number of lots on what was to be the old golf course, near Castle Hill. Another group of 100 lots was ordered sold to the Baltimore and Virginia Investment Company, organized by Baltimore capitalists, but no deed is found to evidence that transaction.

A few lots in the general area of the new hotel were sold to individuals. Before the close of 1890 a companion or rival company, composed in the main of those interested in the Buena Vista development, formed the West Lexington Land Company, and began laying off the A. T. Barclay farm, which lay near and included the limestone quarry west of Lexington. Mr. E. Dillon, of Indian Rock, became interested in the Lexington Quarry Company, which was to produce stone from the quarry to be used as flux in the various nearby iron furnaces and steel mills. A branch railroad was to be laid off to serve this and other nearby industries then on the drafting board. This quarry industry later flourished for a time as Rockbridge Lime and Stone Company.

Other industrial development went forward apace. The old Lexington Manufacturing Company, a wood-working plant at Jordan's Point on the river, had failed and was involved in receivership. Planned to continue or to supplement its production was a chair factory, which was represented as having received an initial order for 5000 chairs before

it had settled upon a new location.

John A. Champe, who manufactured brick for many of the buildings now standing in Lexington, conducted a brick yard near the seventh green of the old golf course, and there burned brick for the new hotel

DeHart, on which construction was progressing.

A broom factory from Ironton, Ohio, planned to move to Lexington, first at a location near East Lexington Depot, but later to a site on Woods Creek at the present driveway approach to Honeysuckle Hill. A building was erected there and some brooms may have been made. In the recollection of the writer this was later the location of a cooper's shop, which turned out barrels and kegs for the lime kiln and local flour mills.

Other industries planned or discussed were a cigar factory, a sash and door mill, a metal hinge plant, tannic acid plant, a tannery, a wagon

works, and numerous other enterprises.

A prime unit in the scheme was to be the Union Steel Company, makers of edged tools, which had lost its Louisville plant by fire and had decided on Lexington as its new location. A site north of the railroad depot was set apart for a stone and brick building, to be 250 feet long by 80 feet wide. Stone from the nearby quarry was used for building the foundation, but the project never reached the stage of its super-structure. Upon the collapse of the boom and the acquisition of the land by Washington and Lee University, the foundation was filled in with clay, leveled off, and became the university tennis courts, still in use as such adjacent to the Wilson Field bridge. Present day tennis players are unaware of their debt to the 'Boom' or of the ghost of Lexington's great steel mill, which may still hover over that playing field.

With the advent of warmer weather and the completion of its maps, the sale of lots was actively advertised in the spring and summer of 1891; but there appear to have been but few takers. A review of the record of conveyances in the local court house shows approximately two dozen lots sold to others than the building companies and the industries planned. The remaining thousands of lots retained their former virtue as orchard, pasture or woodland, and the sale of lots bogged down before it was well started.

An ominous note had crept into the joyful chorus of clinking dollars. Money was beginning to be tight, hard times was the topic of the day, an incipient panic was in the making, and the nation-wide boom had spent itself. The failure of Baring Brothers, international bankers, had touched off an alarm which made itself felt in far corners of the earth, and which effectively dispelled the dream of a greater

Lexington.

Within less than a year from its inception, Lexington's great boom was in a state of collapse, with nothing to show for it but a vast, empty hotel, a ready made site for tennis courts, a wide expanse of unsold lots, and a financial tangle of the first order.

In this atmosphere of dismay and discontent, the Company held its first annual meeting of stockholders in the newly opened opera house on Jefferson Street, converted from a Methodist Church on the site now occupied by the Farmers' Co-operative Store. A large crowd was in attendance and the hope of the officers for a peaceful solution of the Company's troubles was soon dissipated.

In presenting its annual report, which in itself was not conducive to soothing the unrest among the stockholders, the President revealed that over \$200,000 had been paid for the land purchased, (of which a goodly share went to the promoters as the sales price), but there was an item of \$36,000 designated as 'option to H. H. Myers'.

The latter item provoked a heated discussion, during the course of which it was revealed that this constituted a promoter's fee which was to be divided among the five promoters and their local attorney. A group led by Mr. William McKeever challenged the right of the promoters to this additional compensation, citing the representations of stock salesmen that tno promoters' fees would be charged. Colonel Ross vigorously defended the right of this fee, in view of the risks

run by the promoters.

The meeting undertook to proceed with the election of officers, but Mr. M. J. Fulton objected, saying, "Let us settle this promoters business before we go into an election, as I would hate to elect a man who would have to ask himself to return the money." The motion to proceed with the election of officers was lost, a number of stockholders withdrew from the meeting, and the promoters adjourned for a confidential conference. It was finally agreed that an auditing committee of the stockholders should go over the books of the concern and present

its report at an adjourned meeting.

The president was permitted to go ahead with his annual report to the stockholders, in which he commented upon the state of alarm which attended all matters of finance and investment, the calling of loans, the failure to pay stock assessments, and the generally unfavorable aspect of the Company's affairs. On the other side of the ledger, he reviewed the progress made by the Company in its attraction of industry and in prospective sales of lots, and announced that it was still considering the erection of the magnificent iron bridge. It closed with the injunction, "Let the stockholders exercise that degree of constancy and courage which becomes men, and do their duty by the Company, and all will be well."

It is noted that the weekly advertisement of lot sales disappeared from

columns of the local papers after the date of this first meeting.

On November 18th, 1891, the stockholders meeting resumed its session, again at the opera house and with a full crowd in attendance. The auditing committee, composed of Thomas M. Wade, J. D. Anderson, E. A. Moore, W. C. Stuart and J. T. McCrum, made its report showing the sales of land to the Company by its promoters, the stock taken and the commissions received by the directors and officers and attorneys for the Company, and reported that they had called upon the promoters to restore the \$36,000 promoters' fee, which the recipients had declined to do. The committee presented a compromise proposal that the promoters would surrender a large part of their stock, and also proposals from the former owners to reduce the price of their lands and take back land the Company did not now want.

It may be noted that the surrender of stock in place of cash by the promoters might well have conferred on them a blessing rather than a burden, and the reduction of the price of land might offer the prospect of buying it back at a much lower figure than that for which it was sold.

Mr. McKeever again led the onslaught on the promoters, and moved that the various proposals be voted on separately; but the committee insisted that its report was to be taken as a whole or not at all, and the weary stockholders later in the afternoon confirmed the report and

adjourned. They never met again as such.

However, Mr. McKeever was to have the last word. He was manifestly exasperated and in a sour mood, and he followed up the Company's meeting with a pamphlet published and circulated by him, entitled "A Few Plain Words About The Lexington Development Company". The title itself was somewhat misleading, as the words were far from few and other than plain in many instances. Mr. McKeever sharply and vigorously attacked the promoters and, incidentally, the Presbyterian Church in which they were officers. He charged deception, fraud and mismanagement from start to finish, and proceeded to take apart the prospectus issued by the Company.

"If, indeed, the said purposes of the Company were to build a town or city, then this description of the land they bought was a bald exaggeration, misleading in the extreme. \* \* \* Had they said 'much of it was bluffy, with creeks, ravines and kilnpots, where the gazelle could scarcely scale', their description would have been more

accurate and the deception less palpable."

Then the brochure proceeded to the directors of the Company, whose

'hands were stained with promoters fees'.

"That they were liable to indictment no sane man doubts. That they would be indicted and prosecuted was more than probable, from the fact that the Presbyterian Church of Lexington is not the only Presbyterian Church in this county, nor are these Athenian elders the only Greeks."

One small portion of this screed was unwittingly prophetic.

"To further illustrate your ridiculous attitude before the world, let us suppose that Mr. Figgat would take out of the Bank of Lexington thirty-six thousand dollars belonging to the stockholders of said bank, what would you as directors of said bank say and do?"

Within a few years, Mr. Figgat, who was the principal officer of the only bank in Lexington, did that very act, except that he did not stop at \$36,000. In one bleak night he cleaned out all the assets of the bank which could be readily carried off and departed for parts unknown.

The circular of Mr. McKeever was biting and savage, and was filled with assertions that appear highly libelous, unless true; but there is no record that he was held to account for his statements by any of those against whom these were directed, and after the fires of his wrath had died down somewhat he retired to his distillery on the Collierstown road, just west of Lexington.

Although other recriminations against these prominent citizens are suggested in other sources, it is apparent that they suffered no lasting loss of position in church, state or society as a consequence of their unfortunate venture. The stockholders of the Company ratified the compromise proposal by a large majority, and elected the former officers

and directors for a further term.

The loss to the community was heavy, as a great part of the small surplus capital of the local people had been sunk in engineering, prospecting, hotel building, and the buying of land at more than it could possibly prove worth. The promoters, however, appeared not to suffer financially from the venture, or, if they did, they were able to

absorb the blow.

During the period of the boom they erected large and imposing residences. Thomas S. White built and briefly occupied the building at the crest of the hill on Main Street, (now the home of Grace Presbyterian Church), and sold this to Colonel Ross. It was later occupied by J. McD. Adair, thus housing three of the five promoters at various times. Mr. White and Mr. Adair were engaged for some years in the mercantile business, each conducting a store in the community. Colonel Ross eventually retired to Sunnyside where he spent his declining years in farming.

Mr. Myers, who was the founder of Myers Hardware Company, tore down the old Preston home at the south end of Lee Avenue, and erected the residence now occupied there by Mr. Benjamin Huger. Professor A. L. Nelson, at about the same time, built for himself the dwelling of stone, next door to Mr. Myers, which is now the fraternity house of Phi Gamma Delta. Professor Nelson was for many years head of the mathematics department at Washington and Lee University, and a faithful member of the choir of the Presbyterian Church.

There is no especial pleasure or profit to be derived from following the death agonies of this short-lived enterprise. It will suffice to say that the Company was harassed by suits and litigation until its few

remaining assets were exhausted or worn out in the process.

On the other side of the ledger, the boom may be credited for an awakening to the better things of life in the way of conveniences; although these may have come along without this prompting. The 'boom' activity in this sleepy village pointed out the absence of phones, electric lights and other gadgets which were the hallmarks of cosmopolitan life, and we find discussion and planning of these utilities which before long produced results, crude though they may have been.

More sidewalks and crossing stones were demanded, especially to lift skirts out of the dust and mud which were the materials of the sprawling streets, there was the demand for increased water facilities, and there was born a desire for improvement which had not before disturbed Lexington. Needless to say, much of it remains to be done.

Now, sixty five years later, as the level rays of the western sun reveal the fair acres of Lexington's boom area, they are interrupted by no tall factory chimneys nor obscured by clouds of industrial smoke. Over a large part of the lots and streets and avenues envisioned in the early nineties, apple blossoms open, birds still sing, and the green grass grows as of yore. Only in a few vistas, where the plow has not intervened, can be caught the shadowy outlines of the great avenues which were to lead lasting prosperity and wealth to Lexington.

# MINUTES OF APRIL 25, 1959 MEETING

The Rockbridge Historical Society met in duPont Hall at eight o'clock, with Dr. Charles W. Turner presiding.

Col. William Couper read the minutes of the January meeting. Dr. Turner announced that the next meeting would be held on South River and the Archibald Alexander marker would be dedicated at

It was also announced that the "Castle" would be dedicated at that time. A dinner meeting was planned.

It was also announced that the "Castle" would be open the last day of April and the first day of May for the public. It is hoped that the school children of the town and county will take advantage of this opening. The history and civics classes of the grade and high schools have been specially invited. The garden of the "Castle" has been prepared for fall planting.

Since the last meeting of the Society, Dr. Gleason Bean's STONE-WALL'S MAN, SANDIE PENDLETON and Dr. Marshall Fishwick's NEW LOOK AT THE OLD DOMINION have been published. Both Dr.

Bean and Dr. Fishwick are members of the Society.

The Cabinet Diary of William Wilson has been contributed to the

Society by Major Chester Goolrick.

Miss Lois Moore, the speaker of the evening who was introduced by Dr. Turner, spoke on the Honorable William Anderson, the man treated in her thesis. The main emphasis was placed on his attorneygeneralship from 1902 when he played a significant part in the Virginia-West Virginia case. His early life was sketched briefly and then Miss Moore read from references and letters the important role he played in the state government of his day. The address follows: That Willie's life would be a "good and useful" one was the hope of

Mary Ann Anderson for her twenty-five year old son, William Alex-

ander Anderson. This wish had special meaning, since it was penned to her husband, Francis Thomas Anderson, in the uncertain days which followed Appomattox. Young Willie Anderson could look back with pride to ancestors who had joined the patriots in the American Revolution and who had contributed to the development of Virginia, the state of William Anderson's birth. But though the mother had trained her son well in the manners and ideals of ante bellum Virginia, she could but wonder what life would bring to the next generation of southern people. Surely there would be need for able leadership, but would there be opportunities for Virginia's native sons? Before her death in 1881 Mary Ann Anderson's dream was in the process of realization: the Commonwealth was recovering from the ravages of war, and young William Anderson was among those leading in the rebuilding. His greatest contribution to his state came, however, twenty years after his mother's death when he assumed the responsibilities of the office of attorney general.

Willie's father, Francis Thomas Anderson, was a twelve year old boy at the time of the death of his grandfather, Robert Anderson, one of the Ulster Scots who came to America from Donegal, Ireland. Robert Anderson was born about 1735. Soon after reaching his majority he left Ireland. He sailed first to Spain, then to the West Indies, and finally to Philadelphia, arriving just after the news of Braddock's defeat reached the city in 1756. He settled in Delaware, where he met and married Margaret Noely. There his son William Anderson was born. When the boy was about seven years old the family moved to Botetourt County in Virginia.

William Anderson was seventeen years old at the time of the Revolutionary War. His family did not want him to join the patriot forces, but his persistent pleadings won their permission. He joined the company from Botetourt which went south to Carolina to take part in the Battle of Cowpens. He also helped to defend the Valley of Virginia against Tarleton in 1781. When the second war with England came in 1812 Colonel William Anderson was again called to active military service to take command of a Norfolk regiment.

Colonel Anderson was a prominent citizen. He served both as an elder in the Presbyterian Church of Botetourt and as a vestryman in the Eniscopal Church For many years he was county surveyor and

the Episcopal Church. For many years he was county surveyor and state commissioner in charge of improvements for the James River and the Kanawha Canal. He represented Botetourt in the General Assembly. He married Anne Thomas, who in 1800 had come to Botetourt County from Frederick County, Maryland, with her father, Colonel Frank Thomas. Anne was a member of a gracious Episcopalian family, and the home which she and Colonel William Anderson established in Botetourt was called "Walnut Hill."

Francis Thomas Anderson, born December 11, 1808, was the third son of Colonel William and Anne Anderson. He attended the local private grammar school. In 1825 he was first enrolled at Washington College now Washington and Lee University. Three years later, when he was nineteen years old, he was graduated with distinction. He studied law under Allen Taylor, an eminent jurist of Botetourt County. He came to the bar when he was twenty-one, and he soon acquired a lucrative practice. He remained in Botetourt for fifteen years. There he married Mary Ann Alexander of neighboring Rockbridge County, and there his children were born.

In 1855 the family moved to Glenwood in Rockbridge County. Glenwood was the site of the Glenwood Iron Mines, and Francis Anderson gave up almost all of his law practice to devote his time to agriculture and to the iron industry.

Francis Thomas Anderson was one of the Whigs who joined forces with the Constitutional Unionists in 1860. That year he was chair the Bell and Everett electeral college in Virginia He was

man of the Bell and Everett electoral college in Virginia. He was a member of the House of Delegates from 1861 to 1863, and though he stood with the Unionists prior to Virginia's secession, he was whole-hearted in his support of the war effort. In 1870 he was chosen by the General Assembly to serve as one of the five original members of the Virginia Supreme Court of Appeals established by the Underwood Constitution.

Francis T. Anderson was deeply concerned with the welfare of Washington College at Lexington. In 1853 he was elected to the board of trustees. In 1865 he participated in the reorganization of the college and in the call of General Robert E. Lee to the office of college president. In 1879 he was named rector of the college, and he remained

in that post until his death on November 30, 1887.

Francis Anderson's wife, Mary Ann, was the daughter of Andrew and Ann Dandridge Aylett Alexander of Rockbridge County. Mary Ann's father was a member of the board of trustees of Liberty Hall, the forerunner of Washington College. Her paternal ancestor, a Scotsman named Archibald Alexander, left Antrim, Ireland, to settle in the Valley of Virginia in 1747, seven years before the arrival of Robert Anderson to Pennsylvania's shore. Mary Ann was a modest, softspoken woman, but "firmness and decision" were equally a part of her character. Her interests, as revealed by her letters, were her children and their development, her church and her friends. Mary Ann's own mother had died when she was ten years old, and she had but one older sister. Thus she found a special pleasure in household

things and in the rearing of her children.

William Alexander Anderson, the fourth child and the first son of Francis and Mary Ann Anderson, was born on May 11, 1842, at his father's home "Montrose" in Botetourt County. He attended the old field school near Fincastle, and Fincastle Academy then noted for its thorough instruction. His education was supplemented by private tutors and by his father. Francis Anderson expected only the best from his son, and Willie delighted in pleasing him. One of the first references to the child in his mother's descriptive letters to her husband was that he "says to write to Pa I can put on my shoes." When Francis Anderson was called away from home to various business matters in the Valley, Willie was allowed to go along, riding on the horse behind his father. These trips, which often included overnight stops at "Green Forest," his Aunt Glasgow's home, were a great source of fun for the boy. Travelling the wooded trails and hilly fields of Rockbridge County on horseback was a pastime which he enjoyed throughout his life. Yet trips with Francis Anderson were not excursions of idle pleasure. Somewhere in their pack the father had tucked a Latin grammar, or perhaps Goldsmith's HISTORY OF GREECE or Rollin's ANCIENT HISTORY, from the shelves of his own library. Willie's mother expected him to be "very studious and improved" when he returned from his countryside jaunts. Her concern for Willie's academic development was certainly not neglected by her husband, though perhaps on the father-and-son trips the former took somewhat lightly Mrs. Anderson's motherly admonitions to "Make Wm. comb his head and be neat in every particular." For the careful supervision of his childhood, William Anderson was to show his gratitude in later years.

He entered Washington College in 1857, where he applied himself so diligently that he was advised by his physician to take a year's vacation for the sake of his health. While in school he lived in town with his oldest sister's father-in-law, Dr. William Junkin, the pastor of the Presbyterian Church in Lexington. When war broke out in 1861 he joined a college group popularly known as the Liberty Hall Volunteers. They constituted Company I of the Fourth Virginia Infantry, the Stonewall Brigade, and they were the only college company to maintain their identity from Manassas to Appomattox. The Liberty Hall Volunteers received their "baptism of fire" at the Battle of First Manassas in July, 1861. Three bullets struck Anderson, and one

of them resulted in serious injury. The damaging shot lodged in his left kneecap. By himself he managed to get to a field hospital. From there he was sent to Richmond by boxcar to receive treatment at the there he was sent to Richmond by boxcar to receive treatment at the improvised hospital at the Second Presbyterian Church on Fifth Street. He was then taken to the home of his uncle, Joseph Reid Anderson of the Tredegar Iron Works in Richmond, where he rested while the wound healed. Permanent damage was done. Though Anderson suffered no pain after several years, he always walked with a limp, thus winning for himself the sobriquette, "The Lame Lion of the Confederacy." For seven years he used crutches; for the rest of his life he used.

his life he used a cane.

No longer able to serve his company, Anderson began the study of law. In 1863 he joined the "few boys and poor fellows who were disabled in the first battles" and who made up most of the depleted student body at the University of Virginia. Five hundred and fifteen of the six hundred and thirty students enrolled at the University in 1860 had left their studies to join the armies in the field, and the empty rooms on the lawn and the range were rented to passing travellers. In spite of the adverse circumstances, instruction was continued. The famed law school professor, John B. Minor, met his classes on March 1, 1865, the day when the federal troops were expected to arrive. The crippling experiences of the students in their first battles had not dampened their enthusiasm for the Confederate first battles had not dampened their enthusiasm for the Confederate cause. Many of them, including Anderson, joined an artillery company of wounded soldiers and boys commanded by Colonel Alexander Taliaferro. They built breastworks for the defense of Charlottesville along the Rivanna river. Here and at Rockfish Gap they kept guard against General Hunter's army until Hunter had been driven from Lynchburg and his forces had been disbanded.

At the University of Virginia in its first session after the war there prevailed an unusual "degree of earnestness and sobriety." Many of those returning to their studies had been transformed from hows to

those returning to their studies had been transformed from boys to men after the trial of war and defeat. But the college spirit was not one of depression. William Anderson and his good friend Joe Bryan, who was later to be the first owner of the Richmond TIMES DISPATCH, founded a chapter of the Phi Kappa Psi social fraternity. This was the fraternity to which Anderson had belonged during his days at Washington College, and in his new University surroundings he missed the associations which the group had afforded. To his uncle, William D. Alexander of Griffin, Georgia, Anderson was indebted for "a little pocket money" to use for social pleasures.

William Alexander was Mary Ann Anderson's brother, and between him and his young nephew there developed a close correspondence. The uncle often made gifts of money to his namesake, gave him advise about the law profession, encouraged him to take part in public speaking events, and stimulated his interest in industrial and agricultural development in Virginia. In return Anderson gave faithful accounts of his activities in long, appreciative and frequent letters, squired some of his uncle's proteges from Georgia about the University, and gave attentive ear to the wise advice which was offered to him. When admonished to display respect in every relationship Anderson replied, "I believe it to be the duty of everyone to treat others with respect and politeness, and even if interest did not prompt me to pursue the same course, I hope that I would be able to conduct me to pursue the same course, I nope that I would be able to conduct myself towards my fellows in such a way as at least not to forfeit their good opinion." The papers which comprise the Anderson collection at the Alderman Library of the University of Virginia indicate that Anderson abided by this rule of gentlemanly conduct both while he was in school and in his later professional life.

Sitting at the feet of Professor John B. Minor was one of Anderson's most valuable experiences at the University of Virginia. Another of Minor's students wrote that "His (Minor's) strong searching face, his

Minor's students wrote that "His (Minor's) strong searching face, his

flawless dignity of bearing, his perfectly organized intellect, from which radiance streamed when he was lecturing . . . all set him apart . . . as the most masterful and instructive teacher that I have ever known." And still another pupil described Minor's teaching

method as follows:

He adopted the Socratic method, frequently beginning with a question far away from the subject in hand and approaching it nearer and nearer until the underlying principle in its relations and correlations would stand forth clear as the mid-day sun. He thus taught his students to think, to think for themselves, correctly and independently, and fitted them to take up their part in the work of the world as intellectually robust men and to act as such. When Anderson received his Bachelor of Laws degree in June of

1866, he was well prepared to enter the legal profession.

Following graduation Anderson began the practice of law in Lexington, after considering and then rejecting his uncle's proposal that it would be good to establish himself in Richmond. He chose first to become known in his own community. From the very beginning he was able to report satisfactory results to his Uncle William. He took James K. Edmondson as his partner. The two were particularly interested in counselling companies with industrial interests in the Valley. The Dover Coal Company, the Iron and Steel Works Association of Virginia, the Virginia Tin Mining and Manufacturing Company, the Pittsburgh and Virginia Railroad, the Echols Iron Company, the Richmond and Alleghany Railroad—all were organizations in which Anderson and Edmondson had an interest.

As a lawyer, Anderson was deliberate and thorough in the preparation of cases. Though farsighted and imaginative, he would not consent to rash action. He was, however, extremely enthusiastic about his work. His straightforward approach and his enthusiasm sometimes gave way to impatience when he was working informally with others less eager or less alert. Walter Watson from Nottoway County, with whom Anderson had occasional contacts, once in jest concluded a

meeting with the following resolution:

Resolved: That the turbulent impetuosity of Wm. A. Anderson, the hair-splitting quibbles of Wood Bouldin, the interminable commas of C. V. Meredith and J. C. Wysor are tolerable, but the endless prolixity of A. C. Braxton is grievous unto death.

Anderson was a strong speaker. When his voice happened to carry through the open windows of the Lexington court house his Negro hired man was known to remark with pride, "My boss sho' can holler." In the variety of cases he undertook "his character and his fearless spirit combined with his masterful intellect and a rare gift of elo-quence" made him "a tower of strength." By 1889 he was "one of

the busiest leading lawyers in the state."

William Anderson was twice married. In 1871 he married Ellen G. Anderson, the daughter of General Joseph and Sallie Archer Anderson of Lexington. His bride lived only five months after the wedding. William Anderson's second wife was Mary Louisa, or Maza, Blair. She was the daughter of Colonel William B. Blair and Judith Nicoll Blair. was the daughter of Colonel William B. Blair and Judith Nicoli Blair. Colonel Blair was a veteran of the Mexican War who, after having seen action in the major battles of that war, had gone to live in Texas with his bride, a native of New York State whom he had met while he was at West Point. There his daughter Maza was born. When war broke out between the northern and the southern states Colonel Blair became an officer in the Confederate Army. During the war period his family moved to Amelia County, Virginia. After the war Colonel Blair joined the faculty at Virginia Military Institute. When his family moved to Lexington William Anderson was introduced to Maza. The two were married in 1875. Five children were born to the counter. of his legal practice. He was also vitally interested in the economic development of the South and particularly of his native section in Virginia. After a trip to New York while he was still a young man, he dreamed of comparable urban development for the South. He confided to his uncle that he had been impressed with the city of more than one million people and that he hoped some southern city would in the future be its rival. He worked for an extension of the Baltimore and Ohio Railroad which would serve the Valley. He wanted Virginia's western farmers and miners to profit by the Baltimore market, which was more favorable than the Richmond one. He was the author of a tract encouraging immigration to the Valley. His interest in and knowledge of modern developments merited the attention of President Hayes, who appointed him to go as one of the U.S. commissioners to the Paris International Exposition in 1878. He spent six months abroad and upon his return prepared a report entitled "Means of Transportation by Railroads." The best publicized, the most ambitious, and the least successful of the enterprises which Anderson supported was a plan for establishing an industrial center for Virginia in Rockbridge County. For this purpose the Rockbridge Company was organized with Fitzhugh Lee as its president. The year 1890 was the boom year in the brief life of the organization, and the Anderson files at the Alderman Library of the University of Virginia for that year are filled with plans for the city and with contracts made with numerous companies stating the conditions on which they were to move their industries into Rockbridge County. Unfortunately the dream never materialized, and hotels which were hardly used are now memorials to the unsuccessful enterprise.

The cultural, "moral and religious tone" of the Lexington community was praised by Anderson, and he contributed to its advancement. Not quite so versatile as his grandfather, Colonel William Anderson, who had been at the same time a vestryman in the Episcopal Church and an elder in the Presbyterian Church, William Anderson was a member first of the Robert E. Lee Memorial Episcopal Church in Lexington and then of St. Paul's Episcopal Church in Richmond. He was a member of the board of trustees of Washington and Lee from 1884 until the end of his life. He was rector of the college from 1914 until

several years before his death.

An additional interest, and the one which was closely related to his later career as attorney general, was that of politics. Anderson was a state senator from 1869 to 1873, just after Virginia's government had been removed from the hands of military authorities and returned to the control of an elected legislature. This initial post war legislature was not a distinguished assembly; desperate for relief from military control, the Virginia Conservatives had incorporated former Confederate Democrats and old-line Whigs, Negroes and "True Republicans" to gather support for the Underwood constitution and to fill seats in the state legislature. Deficiencies in political experience and in party solidarity were barriers to a successful legislative program. In 1871 the ill-advised Funding Act was passed, according to which Virginia assumed a portion of the ante bellum debt which soon proved to be unbearably heavy. A second error accompanied this legislation; to provide for some of the debt payment the legislature approved the sale of Virginia's railroad stock at unreasonably low prices. Anderson, who had begun his term as senator three years after his graduation from law school, was a member of the Conservative Party who approved both actions. In later years he acknowledged, but did not defend his stand, when he saw the "enormous appreciation" realized by the purchasers of the stock.

Then years lapsed before Anderson again participated in lawmaking in Virginia. In 1883 he won a seat in the House of Delegates as Rockbridge County's representative, defeating the Readjuster candidate, James A. Frazier, in the election which brought the return of Con-

servative, or Democratic, control to the commonwealth. For four years Virginia politics had been under the tavern keeper's son, William Mahone, and his party of Readjusters. In the latter half of the 1870's Virginians had lost faith in the conservatives because of their narrow views on the role of government in society. Many Conservatives had felt that the best government expressed only the will of the privileged class and that it should undertake simply to maintain law and order and to protect property. The electorate reacted to this platform by supporting Mahone, whose administration provided the means for more public services by invalidating part of the state debt, but it also contributed to the corruption of the Negro vote. While out of power the Conservative Party underwent a transformation highlighted by the onthusistic state convention which met in Lymphyur in the by the enthusiastic state convention which met in Lynchburg in the summer of 1883. Recognizing that its limited concepts were outdated, the party adopted a platform which appealed to the numerous sections suffering economic hardship as a result of the war, poor harvests and poor markets. The change in policy was accompanied by a change in name. The renovated Conservative Party became the Virginia Democracy. Its new policies plus its vigorous condemnation of Mahone's tactics among the Negroes brought victory at the polls in 1883. The controlling influence in politics in Virginia after 1883 was this party of white supremacy in which professional men took first place, sponsoring their own brand of progressivism and reform.

William Anderson was among those who readily accepted the new platform. Though he had originally defended the propertied class by supporting total assumption of the prewar debt, he retreated from this stand, and it was he who introduced in the Virginia legislature a motion favoring the acceptance of the Riddleberger, or Readjuster, scheme of debt payment, on the grounds that "any expectation that any settlement of the debt, upon any other basis . . . is absolutely illusory and hopeless."

Anderson's election in 1883 was important because it brought him into the political spotlight at the very beginning of a long period of Democratic administration. He was one of several younger men who shared in the first party victories and who earned positions of prominence within the party in later years. Off to a most favorable start in the competition within this group of new party leaders. Anderson start in the competition within this group of new party leaders, Anderson never climbed to the top in the Democratic hierarchy. Ascertaining whether this fact was due to lack of ability, to lack of ambition, or to the result of fortune is not the purpose of this study. It does appear that from his father he had acquired some distaste for the petty graft and the sly manipulations which political success so often requires. Perhaps if Anderson had achieved more political success his professional talents which came to light between 1902 and 1910 would

have been neglected.

Anderson was elected to three terms in the House of Delegates—first in 1883, and again in 1917. As a legislator he was active in several fields. He was the chairman of the Committee on Schools and Colleges during his entire House career. He served on finance committees and in his last term he was a generous advocate of better roads for the commonwealth. He was the co-author of the Anderson-McCormick election law of 1884, one of the most controversial issues of his legislative career. Passed in an extra session of the first year in which the Democrats had control of the legislature, it was designed to end Mahone's effective control of Negro votes and election machinery by giving the General Assembly, now composed of Democrats, the job of choosing the city and county electoral boards. These boards of three members were charged with appointing registrars and election judges representing both parties to serve every precinct at election time. This law was of political advantage to the Democrats, but it did provide for a measure of Republican participation in the conduct of elections. To Anderson it represented the lesser of two evils: The Commonwealth must

either provide for the supervision of elections by Democratic leaders or revert back to Mahoneism. This problem of establishing fair elections in a state with a large and easily influenced Negro electorate was one which cropped up again in the constitutional convention of 1901-1902. In the intervening period of almost twenty years Anderson did not change his views on the necessity of white supremacy at the polls.

Although the names of John S. Barbour, John Daniel, J. Taylor Ellyson and Tom Martin come first to mind in connection with leadership within the Virginia Democracy, William Anderson was also closely associated with the inner workings of the party. From 1885 to 1900 he was a member of the Democratic State Central Committee. From 1885 to 1890 he was a member of the Democratic Executive Committee. This former group, officially "charged with the affairs of the party," incorporated the core of party leadership and included five members from each congressional district who were named at the state convention after they had been nominated by the delegates from the local districts. It was responsible for deciding upon all questions of statewide interest to the party, for calling state conventions, and for fixing the basis of representation to the conventions. The latter group was an advisory staff of five members chosen by the state central committee, for record keeping, for fund collection, and for publicity. Both groups were headed by the state party chairman chosen by the state convention. The framework of Democratic party organization in Virginia which existed from the birth of the party in 1883 until the turn of the century was chiefly the work of John S. Barbour, the state party chairman for the first seven years of the party's existence. The different levels of authority according to Barbour's plan could well be represented by a pyramid. At the base was the "courthouse clique," a group of men who answered to the beck and call of the county chairman, the important figure on level number two of the pyramid. He named precinct and ward leaders from the clique and saw to it that local offices were filled from the same clique. Next came the congressional district chairman. At the top of the pyramid was the state party chairman. The structure was strikingly undemocratic; power flowed from top to bottom. For almost twenty years the autocratic framework was unchallenged.

In the latter years of the nineteenth century a move for political reform gathered momentum. It was inspired not only by motives grounded on democratic principles but also by the hostility which had developed against Tom Martin, the autocrat of Virginia politics whom the reformers hoped to oust from the U.S. Senate. Anderson was active in the movement. One plea of the reformers was that the selection of state senators be transferred from the hands of the legislators to those of the people. The Democrats were called upon to take a stand on the issue. At the party convention in Roanoke late in the summer of 1897 the question was debated and defeated by a vote of 609 for, and 850 against popular nomination. The victorious opposition was led by John Daniel of Lynchburg; William Anderson, the young and aspiring William Jones of Warsaw, and Greenlee Letcher, one of Anderson's Lexington associates, were among the supporters of the defeated motion. Not satisfied to accept defeat without first exhausting all possible means of remedy, the reformers held their own convention in Richmond in May of 1899, hoping by their action to bring about a change in the party platform at the next regular party convention, slated to be held some months later in Norfolk. William Anderson was the chairman of this spring meeting which has been recorded in Virginia history as the "May Movement of Virginia Progressivism" and which agitated for the nomination of senators by direct primary. In this particular hope the reformers were disappointed. Yet the need for a fresh evaluation of Virginia's political system had been so clearly voiced that the Democrats at the Norfolk convention found it necessary to vote in favor of recommending that the

General Assembly place the question of a constitutional convention before the people.

The reformers like Anderson who had for a long time held high positions in the party were far too influential to be cut out of their former roles by the hard core of Virginia Democrats. Indeed, a new light had been shed upon them which made them of increasing importance to the party. In 1900 Anderson was chosen by state chairman J. Taylor Ellyson to serve on a committee of ten to consider changes in the party's plan of organization. In the 1901 elections Anderson and another reformer, Andrew Montague, were placed on the party ticket for the offices of attorney general and governor, respectively. And in the interval between these two achievements, Anderson was elected to represent the county of Rockbridge and the city of Buena Vista at the constitutional convention which assembled in Richmond in June of 1901.

At the constitutional convention Anderson served on the committee headed by John Daniel which composed the suffrage sections incorporated in the new constitution, and he was the chairman of the Committee on Final Revision. Anderson's attention during these months was consequently devoted almost solely to politics and to constitutional law, and he received at least one letter from a harassed correspondent who had not heard from the Lexington lawyer regarding business matters. Probably Anderson's schedule was at its busiest in August of 1901. The constitutional convention was in session, and Democrats from all over the state were preparing to assemble in Norfolk on August 14 to name the party candidates for the fall elections. On June 26, Anderson had announced his candidacy for the office of attorney general.

The selection of the party candidate for that office was the main item of business scheduled for August 15, the second day of the Democratic Convention in Norfolk. The nominees were John L. Jeffries of Culpeper, William G. Robertson of Roanoke, Samuel W. Williams of Wythe County, and William Anderson. Enthusiastic speech making accompanied the nominations. Anderson's name was placed before the convention by Allen Caperton Braxton, a Staunton attorney, in a speech which "was said to have been the best of many." Braxton emphasized "the service of Major Anderson as a Confederate soldier," eloquently utilizing the strongest sentimental appeal available to the political strategists of the times. Another Anderson supporter declared that he was the "peer of any man in the State." William A. Jones "made a strong plea for Anderson as a Confederate soldier." In nominating John Jeffries, Congressman Rixey also relied on the Confederate theme, but because Jeffries was a younger man Rixey had to dwell upon the sacrifices made during the war by Jeffries' parents.

When the results of the first ballot were reported, Jeffries led by a bare margin of two votes. Five hundred and ninety-four delegates favored Jeffries while Anderson had the support of five hunded and ninety-two of the delegates. When the Jeffries men learned of their slight victory, they "mounted chairs and yelled like mad men." For time the efforts of the Chairman, Carter Glass to call the convention to order came to naught.

When the clamour subsided, a second roll call was taken. Robertson's name was dropped, and additional numbers were added to the Anderson camp. The reshuffling of votes during the second ballot worked to Anderson's advantage, and he was named the party's candidate for office when the results were announced. The real battle had been fought on the convention floor, for though November's vote was light, Anderson's Republican opponent in the official race received negligible support. On January 1, 1902, Anderson became attorney general of Virginia.

## MINUTES OF JULY, 1959 MEETING

The Rockbridge Historical Society met at 4:30 P.M. for its regular

summer meeting at the Mountain View School.

A brief business session was held at which time recognition was accorded those who had made the Archibald Alexander marker possible, namely Mr. Earl Paxton, Mrs. Charles McCulloch, Miss Ellen Anderson, and Col. William Couper.

A list of books given the Society was read including some 20 volumes from the library of the late Dr. Reid White, given by his family, and several volumes relating to the life and work of Archibald Alexander,

gifts of Mr. Bruce Patterson and Dean Frank J. Gilliam.

Miss Ellen Anderson and Mrs. Gordon Heiner were both praised for their work in the Fine Arts and in the publication of news articles.

"Dr. Archibald Alexander, Preacher, Teacher and Person" was the title of Dr. Goodridge Wilson's dedicatory address given before some forty

members and friends of the Society.

Dr. Wilson, Presbyterian minister of Bristol and authority on Southwest Virginia for the ROANOKE TIMES, is a brother of Miss Margaret

Wilson of Lexington.

The Society dedicated a handsome stone marker placed near the birthplace of Alexander on H. W. Chittum's property at the point where Irish Creek joins the South River. Mr. Chittum kindly gave the material and the land for the marker.

Dr. Wilson told of how his interest had been aroused in Archibald Alexander with the purchase of a 10-cent volume of his life found in a New York bookstore many years ago. After this he traced Dr. Alexander's ancestry from Ireland to Rockbridge and told of his father William building a cabin on a place near where the new marker stands.

Here, Archibald was born in 1771. Already his father was an elder in a local Presbyterian Church and was a leading man of the community. His father Archibald had been high sheriff and had served as agent

for Ben Borden.

Dr. Wilson stressed the importance of young Archibald's training under the teachers, William Graham and James Priestly. When he was 17 years old, Archibald was made tutor for the family of General Posey of Spotsylvania County where he decided to become a minister. The Presbyterian Church leaders of Virginia soon selected him intinerant

minister for the state.

So effective was his work that at 25 years of age he was asked to be president of the struggling Hampden-Sydney College. As a result of his and other leaders' efforts he soon had the college on its feet and on the way to being a leading church college in the South. During this period he married Janetta Waddell, daughter of the famous blind preacher. Later, Dr. Alexander served a large church in Philadelphia and from there he want to become professor of the learner there. and from there he went to become professor of theology at Princeton. Here, he founded the Princeton Theological Seminary, a leading school of Presbyterianism today.

Dr. Wilson stressed Alexander's ability as a clear thinker, his love of people and his simple, unaffected manner. These traits were illustrated first on a visit to New England where he impressed Church leaders with his broad knowledge. Upon inquiry where he had received such training, he said in the mountains of Virginia. Again, when he was Seminary President, and he and his associates were often called upon for mission work, always Dr. Alexander was preferred because of his method of making the complex, simple and because of his appealing

Dr. Wilson's method seemed akin to that of his subject, for with no manuscript he presented the material in a clear, concise and easy manner. Other markers erected by the Society during its existence have been those to Mary Greenlee, William Washington and Margaret Junkin

Preston.

## MINUTES OF OCTOBER 27, 1959 MEETING

The fall meeting of the Rockbridge County Historical Society was held Tuesday October 27, 1959 at the "Castle". Following a report from the nominating committee, officers were unanimously elected for a twovear term as follows:

President-Col. George M. Brooke

Vice-Presidents: Dr. Marshall Fishwick, Mr. Earl K. Paxton, Dr. Morrison Hutcheson, Dr. J. S. Moffatt, Mrs. John Merritt, and Mrs. L. W. McNulty.

Secretary—Mrs. Louise Alexander Treasurer—Miss Lula Dunlap

On motion of the retiring secretary, the Society unanimously voted its appreciation for the splendid and untiring work of the retiring president, Dr. Turner, over the past two years.

The subject of the speaker of the evening, Dr. Allen Moger, was "Lee's Unwritten History of the Army of Northern Virginia." Citing correspondence which Lee engaged in during the years while he was president of Washington and Lee, Dr. Moger recounted how the Confederate leader gave serious thought to a definitive history of his command, only to be deterred in the end by a lack of records and an inability to assemble the recollections of his chief lieutenants.

There being no further business the meeting edicurred following Dr.

There being no further business, the meeting adjourned following Dr.

Moger's address. His address is to be publihed elsewhere.

## MINUTES OF JANUARY 26, 1960 MEETING

The Rockbridge Historical Society met at 6:30 on January 26th at the Robert E. Lee Hotel. This was the annual dinner meeting. The new president, Col. George Brooke presided. Eighty-three members and guests attended.

In his opening remarks Col. Brooke noted that the Society was fortunate, not only in its locale, a county in which have resided so many famous or interesting people, but also because of the presence of several eminent historians connected with the local colleges who have been wilking to devote time to the Society. He paid special tribute to Dr. Charles Turner who has served the Society in so many different capacities. Col. Brooke remarked that world and national history is built upon local history and stressed the importance of preserving the exceptionally rich history of this county.

Mrs. J. P. Alexander made an announcement about the forthcoming Community Art Exhibit.

Mrs. W. T. Paxton, membership chairman, recognized new members. Dr .Turner announced that the Castle garden had been restored with the help of the local Council of Garden Clubs. He expressed the Society's appreciation of this work and stated that the April meeting would be held in the Castle as a dedication of the garden.

Dr. Turner also announced that Dr. Wright would assist him in the cataloging and care of the documents and artifacts of the Society at the Castle. He reminded us that no proceedings of the Society had been published for some time and stressed the importance of doing this before valuable papers should become lost or unavailable. He pointed out that with the Civil War Centennial commemoration coming up, this would be an appropriate time for such a publication.

Col. Brooke next called upon Dr. Turner, as chairman of the program committee, to introduce the speaker of the evening, Dr. Ollinger

Crenshaw, of Washington and Lee University.

Dr. Crenshaw spoke, from an evident amount of research and with a good deal of humor, on Dr. Milton Wiley Humphries; emphasizing, to the delight of his audience, the quirks and foibles of a man who was one of the great scholars of his day.

Dr. Crenshaw's speech is to be published elsewhere.

Col. Brooke asked that the minutes of the Executive Board be read by the secretary.

Miss Lula Dunlap, Treasurer, gave a detailed report of the year's financial transactions, reporting a balance as of December 31st of \$1308.22. Miss Ellen Anderson reported letters of acceptance of office from the five vice-presidents.

Col. Brooke adjourned an exceptionally pleasant meeting.

# MINUTES OF APRIL 25, 1960 MEETING

The Rockbridge Historical Society met on April 25, 1960 at the Castle. The president, Col. George Brooke presided.

The secretary was absent at the business session but was assured that no new business was transacted and that the session was routine and very brief. Col. Brooke said that he would make some notes of the meeting for the minutes file.

Miss Mary Galt gave a talk on the history of the Castle, recalling for us many delightfully interesting and amusing incidents of earlier inhabitants of the building in which the meeting was held.

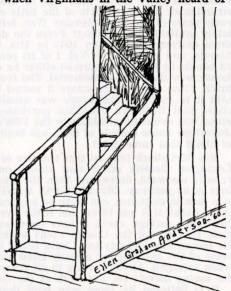
The following is the address:

been published for some time and circused the importance of deing this

#### "THE CASTLE"

A few days ago, on the nineteenth of April, 1960, it became my duty to pay tribute over radio WREL to the Battle of Lexington, Massachusetts, for which our town was named. I did not have time to remind the radio audience of the fact that when Virginians in the Valley heard of

the British blockade of Boston, collections of foodstuffs were made to send to the patriots whose supplies were cut off in Massachusetts. I tried to imagine what the farmers were doing on that April morning when we were still part of Augusta County in his Majesty's colony of Virginia, within the British Empire, 2½ years before our town was first thought of by the Virginia Assembly. It had no relation at all to the naming of Lexington, but, had I really possessed the powers to evoke a certain moment in the past that stretches behind us, I should have searched carefully up hill and down dale, amid the boulders and the April wildflowers future Randolph locate the Street in the future county seat of the future Rockbridge



County to see whether, within yards of the GREAT ROAD which now is our Main Street and to the eastward there would be found a two story

cottage of stone, in a field, and perhaps on a horse trail.

In fact, my fellow members of the Rockbridge Historical Society, in this historic little building which is our proudest possession, we have a first class mystery. Mr. Hale Houston of blessed memory, generous benefactor who in 1946 left us the Castle, thought that probably this stone building was already standing here before the town was laid off. Some years ago Mr. Houston's brother-in-law, Dr. L. L. Campbell, in Vol. 4 of our society's proceedings stated that "Built soon after Lexington's incorporation in 1778, the building was at first used for lawyers' offices. It may very well be the oldest house still standing within the town limits." The late Dr. E. Pendleton Tompkins, devoted historian of our county, says that when Mr. Andrew Reid bought the lot in the town on which this house stands he paid only \$50 for it; the deed (recorded in 1794) may have been recorded quite a good while after Andrew Reid took possession. The purchase price is given in dollars rather than in the usual pounds. It would seem said Dr. Tompkins that the lot could hardly have had a house on it and have sold even then for only \$50.

So here is our unsolved mystery: is the Castle older than Lexington (laid off in 1778)? If, as some have thought, it antedated the town, could it have already have been in a dilapidated condition and therefore counted as no asset in determining the value of Mr. Reid's lot? Dilapi-

dated in what way? and why? What was it used for before?

If it is NOT older than Lexington, at what moment in the village's early history was it put up? and why is it not properly parallel with Randolph Street? Why was it built of stone? Dr. Tompkins tells us that the original houses of the village of Lexington were of logs, and in 1796 when the great fire occurred there was only one brick building which

alone survived the fire. This brick house (now called the Withrow House) was so badly damaged, Mrs. McCulloch tells us that the family then living in it had to move.

As I sat outside of the Castle a few days ago waiting for two professional members of our Society, I wondered why the material of the Castle was stone rather than logs or brick? Could it be that the construction of the few streets of the little county seat laid off during the early years of the Revolutionary War, left a good deal of stone immediately available for building? From the deightful and very valuable address delivered in January 1941 by Mrs. Charles McCulloch before this Society, and preserved in Vol. I of its proceedings, we learn that on lot 13 bought by Cornelius Dorman either he or John Galbraith built a stone house, now the Jackson Memorial. The front was at some time faced with brick. From the Dorman estate it passed to Dr. Archibald Graham, who sold it to Jackson. This house was usually rented out. Mrs. McCulloch states that Dorman's extensive purchases were mostly after 1791. So stone was evidently available in the 1790's. We know that the Zechariah Johnstone house outside of town was built of stone in 1797. IS the Castle of about that same date?

Mrs. McCulloch tells us that the fire of 1796 started about where the Lexington Gazette office now stands on Jefferson Street and swept rapidly eastward, destroying then the Court House and all other buildings in its pathway. DID IT CROSS RANDOLPH STREET? If the Castle was then in existence, can there be any trace of that fire anywhere on or in its walls? If it was there, and if the fire was stopped before it reached this stone cattage, could it have been within these walls that Andrew Reid first placed the County Court books when fire threatened them? He owned this property and I have heard he had his office here. Perhaps some of the antiquarians already know where these records were stored when salvaged. Anyhow, I say in all reverence "God Bless Andrew Reid for saving them!" He was clerk of the court from 1778 to 1831.

It is believed by those who hold that the town is older than the

It is believed by those who hold that the town is older than the Castle that this little stone house was put up for lawyers' offices at a place convenient to the Court House. Within the memory of citizens now alive it had several entrace doors; which would seem to bear out at least part of this hypothesis of its first history. At that period I am reliably informed there was no outside staircase. This interested me because, having spent two years in the Castle, from 1945 to 1947, I felt sure it had had an inside staircase: I could see where waste space must exist, now blocked off by inner walls added in comparatively recent times. Just a very short time ago I found most interesting proof of

this inner staircase. In fact I can show you a picture of it.

Most fortunately for the purpose of this enquiry I mentioned my current preoccupation with the Castle to Miss Ellen G. Anderson of our Society and its hypothetical staircase. To my delight she said that she remembered it! What a thrill to find someone who not only remembered it but who has an artist's visual memory and an artistic ability to set

it down in a drawing.

At that time that Miss Ellen Anderson was a little girl the Castle had ceased to house college students as it had once done, and was the home of some colored families which took in washing. (I've heard from another source that the Castle reminded people who passed up the hill belony, of houses in thel ittle hill towns of Italy as the bright hued garments fluttered in the breeze behind the Castle in that period of its history). As no doubt some of you can recall, in the days when washerwomen didn't have telephones, families desiring to convey a message to the laundress would often send it by some small child. Many times Miss Anderson saw the lower floor of the ancient structure and the interesting staircase with its beautiful planking coming out into a lower room. This we may assume, I think, was an original part of the building. Miss Anderson never climbed the stairs so she cannot say whether there was a

platform or whether it was a winding staircase. She has drawn for us the actual part she saw, and we are truly grateful. Her certified drawing will be part of our Society's archives. She hopes to find a sketch she

once made of the exterior with its other entrance doors.

Through the interest of Dr. Fishwick, we hope to have exact measurements made of the Castle even to the cellar. What his sociology student, Mr. Wolosoff, will find I do not know: facts are what we need, as you see, in investigating the early history of our beloved little building. We shall await with interest the results of the exact investigation of Mr. Wolosoff.

As to records of it in writing, any records before 1778, of course, would not be in this Court House, for this county dates only from 1778 And I doubt if much could be gleaned from the research over in Staunton that I might have tried to do had I had fewer other calls on my time this spring, better eyesight and a helicopter to run back and forth in. But one never knows. Some of our younger members may find out what we don't know now. More power to them!

It seems to me we need a team of a detective writers and an archaeologist-like Agatha Cristie and her husband for instance,-or a Geiger counter geared not to centuries but to decades, to translate the vibrations of these thick stone walls for us. My fellow members, in this little talk I present you not a demonstration all tied up and signed Q.E.D., but an

invitation and a challenge to delve further, by all means of ancient and modern research, into the early history of your Castle.

We do know that it existed and was used in early Lexington, and we do know something of what early Lexington was like. The Court House for instance, the first Court House, was not at the corner of Main and Washington Streets, but at the corner of Randolph and Nelson Streets where Mrs. Finch Brown's property is. Dr. Diehl's research has established that, and some years ago the Virginia Frontier Chapter, D.A.R. set up a marker there to remind all who pass of that interesting fact. Twice the marker has been stolen, cast away and recovered. The second time it has not yet been put in place again. The existence of law and order and a constituted court in our county seat has not yet weeded out the vulgar idea of a joke that impels the drunken or juvenile roisterer to remove landmarks, a very old form of folk humour dating back to the middle ages and doubtless far beyond.

In Mrs. McCulloch's address from which I have drawn freely, we are reminded when we speak of the streets of Lexington in the early days that we must not visualize Randolph, Main and Jefferson, Nelson, Washington and Henry Streets as we see them today. "The Great (Valley) Road toiling up the hill formed Main Street—climbing to a level several feet above the present Court House Wall; going down to Jefferson Street you descended ten feet lower than at present. Bedrock was the base of the six streets of the village and it was covered with just plain dirt; in winter and in all rainy weather bottomless pits of clay sucked down the feet of horses and of travellers; so that the blinding dust of summer was perhaps less of a hardship. Through these streets the early men of the law came to their offices within these walls. Many privileged communications no doubt were told to legal ears within this house. Oh that walls

had tongues as well as ears!"

Now a building is hardly important, in itself, unless it is a specimen of architectural beauty or a relic of some forgotten civilization; it is its human associations that make the value of most small American survivals from the days of our forebears. We can conjecture with interest and perhaps often with probable verisimilitude what were the conversations, even the thoughts of early Lexingtonian worthies, who spent their working hours herein. How long this house served the lawyers I know not. For two long human generations it continued to serve our citizens for office space or housing and doubtless saw and heard much of interest. But we must skip these two long generations to come to the vivid human record that forms the next chapter of the history of the Castle. Happy Achilles to have had his Homer! Not many years after this little stone cottage came into the possession of Dr. Livingston Waddell in 1865, Washington College reopened under its new president, General Robert E. Lee. And a small boy who had seen the great soldier at the end of the war was growing up in another county to become in the 1880's the very young and eager Washington and Lee freshman whom we know today as our Society's second great benefactor, the venerable and learned, Dr. Leslie Lyle Campbell, our next door neighbor. It is owning to Dr. Campbell that we have such a delightful picture of life in the

Castle for students of the 1880's.

Dr. Campbell has written "Some Old Castillians", lively and delightful recollections of his college mates who slept and studied and talked within these walls. These young men had the great privilege of taking their meals in the home of the Waddells next door. "What Castillian", he writes, "can ever forget the long dining table in the Waddell home!" He cites the sparkling wit of Miss Martha who at the age of 16 had begun the loving labor of mothering the motherless brothers and sisters who called her "SI MA", who was reverenced by the students from the Castle—Miss Edmonia Waddell who reminded one of the violets she grew, their friends, the tall and gracious Misses White; the Hon. "Ran Tucker, professor of law who was a great tease—what joyous memories Dr. Campbell has set down for those of us who came too late to enjoy this delight-

He lists over a dozen of his college mates who shared these privileges with him, and he gives us priceless glimpses of college life in the class of 1887. "Life at the old Castle rolled evenly on. Studies were little interrupted by their old time baseball and football on the campus, walks and extracurricular activities. But life was real and rich, shot through with quiet comfort and sunshine of comradeship". Music had its place in their lives: Liv Houston with his guitar and his rich bass voice, Dr. Campbell with his untutored tenor and other friends gathered from time to time in the rear of Larrick's clothing store "under the aegis of that lighthearted troubadour, Jim Miller". They were not an organized glee club, just a handful of serenaders who sang old lyrics "beneath the

window where my love lies dreaming".

Football was not the football of today; the teams were unlimited in number, two leaders picked their men from the crowd on the campus. It was a friendly game, harmless, enjoyed by all. The star player was Babe Porter, a giant from Texas, (I believe he later went to Kansas City.) Skating was a joy by day or by moonlight on the old North River.

Having had calculus at McGuire School, a very thorough school, two freshmen boys, Dunn and Leslie Lyle Campbell just after chapel ventured to approach Professor Nelson with a hesitant request to be allowed to take Senior Math. The stern professor was aghast but finally said they must first pass an examination on all the preceding courses. This they did the very next day without texts or time for review and the two timid youngsters entered Senior Math. In those good old days says Dr. Campbell the Senior Math exams were searching and terrific. It was an all night and an all day affair with no time limits. Reams of paper were consumed. Students entered the exam room humming under their breaths, we won't go home until morning and they didn't. The exam was set by Prof. Nelson who then left the class. About noon Mrs. Nelson sent over trays laden with meats and sweets. After lunch the boys saw no human countenance other than those of their mates until at early dawn the next day they delivered their papers at the Nelson front door.

Dr. Campbell's happy recollections of the 1880's do not omit the colored people; he recalls with appreciation and respect for character, the faithful colored man, Allen Bowyer, who came each morning without fail to make six fires in the Castle and as many more in the Waddell home. He remembers a little colored boy playing the mouth harp in the street

in front of the castle, a half grown minstrel called Siamese, who also played an instrument of his own invention, a one-string harp, as he

swaved right and left with sparkling eyes shuffling his feet.

One vivid memory was that of waking up in the dead of night in the southern end room of the main floor of the Castle, and seeing thru' the open half door in the eastern sky a dazzling comet, hanging over the Blue Ridge, its bright tail extended far away to the Southwest, The Comet of 1882.

An auditory memory was of the songs from the jail, then as now the near neighbor of the Castle. "Who can every forget", says Dr. Campbell, "that mixture of harmony and pathos as the dark inmates sang the old songs of Foster and spirituals!" On Sunday the plaintive strains reached the ear: "Shall we gather at the River?" "In the sweet by and

by".

One recollection of college life seems particularly interesting: each year on Bloody Island in Wood's Creek back of the college buildings were fought the traditional battles between rival fraternities. Two fraternities who nursed a traditional feud would choose their best protagonists who with their seconds, gathered toward midnight on that island to contend for the prestige of their fraternities. (I am using much of Dr. Campbell's own phraseology.) The fatal night approached. Tho' every effort was made to keep it a secret, Freshman Campbell and his fellow Castillians seem to know when it came. The young Campbell's heart almost ceased beating with suspense as the leaden hours dragged on. Finally his hero had won.

For twenty-five years a succession of eager hopeful boys lived here; then the doors were closed to students. Dr. Campbell includes in his notes some verses: are they his own? Maybe someone here tonight will

know as I read them:

(He gives them in quotation marks)
"Gone! and there's not a gleam of you,
Faces that float into the faraway;
Gone! and we can only dream of you,
Each as you fade like a star away.
Come! and gaze on our face once more,
Bring us the smiles of the olden days;
Come! and shine in your place once more,
And change the dark into golden days."

Dr. Campbell, although you are not with us tonight we think of you. Dr. Turner, please, on your next visit to Dr. Leslie Lyle Campbell, thank him for us all, not only for the generous gifts of money that have helped our Society so much but even more for the non-material gift of a glimpse into the living past of our Castle. In a building dedicated to the preservation of the values of bygone days, not least of these values is the spirit of youth and hope.

# MINUTES OF JULY 26, 1960 MEETING

The Rockbridge Historical Society gathered July 26th, for a dinner meeting at the Robert E. Lee Hotel. Past-president, Dr. George W. Diehl,

presided in the absence of the president, Col. George Brooke.

Dr. Diehl called on Dr. Churchill Gibson for the invocation; after which he presented Dr. Gibson and Senator Willis A. Robertson as distinguished guests of the Society and called on members to introduce their other guests, of whom there were a number, both locally and from a distance.

Prior to the business meeting, Dr. Diehl invited Senator Robertson to make a few remarks to the Society. He graciously complied by commending the aims and efforts of the Society, beginning his remarks by saying "I was glad when my old friend Churchill Gibson called on the God

of our founding fathers'-reminding us that in these days of so many threats to our cherished institutions, it behooves us more than ever to "be true to the faith and principles of our founding fathers". He noted Rockbridge's rich historical heritage and closed by quoting Job's admonition to his people, "Remove not the ancient landmark which thy forefathers have set.'

The business session was quite brief. The secretary requested permission to have minutes of April meeting approved at a later meeting since she had been absent during the business session of that meeting and the president, who had agreed to make notes of any action taken,

was now out of the country.

The treasurer's report was given by Miss Lula Dunlap.

The membership chairman, Mrs. P. L. Paxton, reported eight new members. These being: Mrs. Fred Cole; Mr. Lee McLaughlin, Mr. Baxter Morrison; Col. and Mrs. Leslie German; Mrs. Edward Steidtman, and Gen. and Mrs. Shell.

Mrs. Paxton also noted the passing of several former members and asked that we bow our heads for a moment in honor of: Mrs. W. A. Greaver, Mr. C. E. Harper; Miss Mary Edna Holmes; Miss Agnes Irwin; Miss Willie Moose; Dr. W. A. McClure; Miss Judith Anderson; and Miss Ann Johnstone.

Miss Ellen Anderson introduced Mrs. Gordon Heiner who spoke on one of the great sons of Rockbridge County, Dr. Ephriam McDowell, and his patient, Jane Todd. Filed with the minutes is an extensive digest of this very interesting account, clipped from the Rockbridge County News.

Senator Robertson suggested that, since the story was pertinent to national as well as local history, he would like to have Mrs. Heiner's paper printed in The Congressional Record. This did appear in the issue

for August 9, 1960, page A6033.

Several interesting articles of the era were exhibited; Dr. Hunter McClung had loaned his collection; there was also a set of scales for weighing medicines that had once belonged to Dr. McDowell for which Mr. William Hay, had made a beautiful stand to facilitate it's permanent display at the Castle.

Mrs. Hay called to our attention the fact that one of our most loyal and helpful members, Mrs. George Wiltshire, was absent because of illness. The group rose in a standing ovation to express our affection

and our wish for her speedy recovery.

Mrs. W. A. Flick and Mrs. W. O. Hay received the appreciation of the Society for their part in arranging the dinner meeting. Particular note was made of our pleasure in the beautiful display of roses donated from Mrs. Hay's garden.

# MINUTES OF OCTOBER 31, 1960 MEETING

The regular fall meeting of the Rockbridge Historical Society was held at the Castle on October 31 and was very well attended in spite of the heavy downpour of rain. Col. Brooke presided.

The minutes of the Executive Meeting held October 17 were read and

Dr. Turner reported that the Castle library had been enlarged and that the books acquired last year (about 100) had been catalogued. A collection of old and interesting school books presented to the Society by Mr. Leslie Campbell were on display. Dr. Turner also showed the members an election cartoon of 1860 which is on permanent loan to the

Col. Brooke read a letter from the State Chamber of Commerce forwarded to him by Don Huffman of the local Chamber of Commerce asking for materials from this area to be used by Thalhimers Department Store of Richmond in a window display of Civil War interest. Col. Brooke

asked members for suggestions.

A letter was also read from Mrs. Lawrence Smail, a talented artist now living in Lexington, offering to paint old homes and places of historic interest in the county.

Col. Brooke read a letter from Major Chester Goolrick, a member of the Rockbridge County Centennial Committee asking if the Society would be interested in staging a ceremony at the Court House to commemorate the point at which the first local troops departed for the War between the States. A suitable marker would also be erected. Col. Brooke stated that he would appoint a committee to work out plans and that Dr. James Connor of the V.M.I. History Department had agreed to be Chairman of this committee. Mrs. Flournoy was suggested as consultant to the committee and Mr. Houston Barclay was also mentioned.

Col. Brooke then presented Gen. James Anderson, former State Highway Commissioner, whose paper, entitled, "A Twentieth Century Highway Story", traced the growth of Virginia's highways from its earliest surveys by Justice John Marshall before 1812 to the present excellent network serving towns and counties. Gen. Anderson paid special tribute to the efforts of Senator A. Willis Robertson toward improvement of federal highways and to Dr. Reid White, Judge Stuart Moore, Sen. Robertson and others in the betterment of county roads. The goal set for Rockbridge is a reasonable year-round transportation to accessible and inaccessible places in the County.

Mrs. McCulloch spoke of the passing of Miss Elizabeth Barclay, a long devoted member of the Society, and asked that members observe a moment of silence in her memory.

The Society was honored to have Senator Robertson present for the meeting, as well as Mrs. John Merritt, a vice-president living away from Lexington.

The address follows:

It was with keen regret that I deleted from this paper the story of

Virginia's highways for almost the 300 years after Jamestown.

Virginia has many firsts in history. The first bridge in the United States was at Jamestown. In 1816 Virginia had the first State Department of Public Works. Laommi Baldwin was its first head. A few years later that great man Claudius Crozet came to Virginia as Chief Engineer.

Our state has been fortunate that its leaders for upwards of 200 years have realized that Virginia's future depended on the development of its transportation routes. Except for periods of war much of our talents, resources and energy have gone to the improvement of transportation. You and your people have played important parts in developing the highways of Rockbridge and Virginia.

A few years ago I read the biographies of two great Virginians—Marshall's "Life of Washington" and Beveridge's "Life of Marshall." Chief Justice Marshall makes frequent reference to Washington's realization that the development of our nation depended on adequate, safe and economical transportation. Washington urged Virginia to develop its resources by developing transportation routes. Jefferson wrote Washington urging him to lend his name and talents to this development program. Jefferson wrote, "Would the superintendence of this work break in too much on the sweets of retirement and repose. What a monument to your retirement it would be -— it would remove the only objection."

After John Marshall had been Chief Justice for about ten years he interrupted his duties on the Supreme Court to take charge of a field party exploring the most feasible route from the James River near Lynchburg to the Ohio. Beveridge says: "In his 57th year, Marshall set out as head of the expedition and a thorough piece of work he did." Marshall's report is alive with farseeing and statesman like suggestions. It was hard that the War of 1812 was getting under way and plans for internal improvements had to be laid aside.

Soon he was to recommend that no county be aided unless suitable provisions for unkeep were made.

Capt. Wilson expressed deep appreciation for the cooperation of the railroads in the state.

Many (maybe I should say most) of the counties had special road

laws and Capt. Wilson wanted all counties on a uniform basis.

About this time there was an intensified survey of Virginia's large assortment of road material. Limestone is so plentiful in Rockbridge and of such fine quality that our community has never been short of suitable material for road building.

West of the Blue Ridge, however, sand for making good Portland Cement concrete is in very poor supply. Hence it is rare to see Portland

Cement concrete pavements in our area.

In the first report of the Highway Commission there are listed applications from 3 of the 6 Districts in Rockbridge—namely Walker's Creek, South River and Natural Bridge. State aid could not be furnished under appropriations available.

In 1907 \$20,572.54 was spent on roads in Rockbridge. Of this 65%

was spent by Districts and 35% by the County.

The highway commissioner was charged by law with giving equal ser-

vice, so far as practicable, to each county of the State.

The first salary of the Commissioner was \$3,000 per year and his

assistant \$1,800.

An engineer appointed by the Commissioner whose salary is not to exceed \$1,200 per year shall be paid by the county having the benefit of his services. Of course the board of supervisors had control over all roads and bridges in the county.

For a long period preceding the Civil War there had been extensive turnpike building. Now the counties are authorized to take over abandoned turnpikes and treat them as other public roads.

In less than two years after the Highway Commission was established 7 counties issued bonds for roads.

Amherst	\$80,000
Washington	50,000
Russell	150,000
Culpeper	105,000
Orange	25,000
Norfolk	200,000
Mecklenburg	110,000

While the Commission saw that the people were awake to the importance of building roads they thought it very unwise that proper provision for maintenance was not mandatory.

In 1916 came the first Federal Aid Road Act. Among the requirements of the Act were (1) that a responsible State Highway Department be available to administer the funds and (2) that a state highway system be established.

With the end of World War I there came an upsurge in the use of motor vehicles. This brought increased demands for year round roads. Senator Willis Robertson had an act passed allowing a community to advance funds for the construction of a certain road. This act was used extensively for several years. At one time about 7 million was available from this source.

There is room for much study and reflection on the changes in our way of life caused by the motor vehicle and the motor road. People who used to think a trip of 20 miles was quite an undertaking now think little of a motor trip of several thousand miles.

Fifty years ago in Lexington it was easy to tell which boys and girls came from town and which from the country. Now these differences have

been effectively wiped out.

In 1922 Virginia secured the services of one of the ablest highway administrators in the United States. Henry G. Shirley, who was born in West Virginia and educated at V.M.I., had extensive railroad and highway experience when he assumed his duties as Chairman of the Virginia Highway Commission. A gentleman of great force he proved to be one of the finest public servants Virginia has ever had. Under his manage-

ment the state highway system rapidly took shape and meaning.

In 1923 it was decided in a state-wide referendum that Virginia would build its roads in a "pay-as-you-go" plan and not by bond issues. This proved a very wise decision for our roads benefited by increased knowledge of highway traffic and increased knowledge of the evolution

of the motor vehicle and highway design.

In 1932 under the stress of the depression the Byrd Road Law was passed. This placed the County Roads of 96 of Virginia's 100 counties under the State Highway Department. Four counties voted to look after their own roads but one of the four came along with the 96 after one year.

The provisions of the Act were wisely drawn. In effect it set up a partnership between the Boards of Supervisors and the Highway Department. Public hearings are held by the Board of Supervisors on the Secondary Highway Budget. Keeping county officials and interested citizens close to the local road picture has proved extremely helpful. The partnership arrangement has proved most rewarding.

The Highway Commission must of necessity have broad powers in the location of roads, allocation of funds, etc. The General Assembly provided that the Commission divide the state into not less than 8 construction districts and called on the Commission to make an equitable distribution of funds among the Districts. Public hearings must be held on fund allocations before they can be made final. Many of you have

attended these hearings.

As we all know population centers create traffic as well as costly problems of highway construction and maintenance. Almost everyone is a traffic expert and a highway engineer. This universal interest in

what is being done helps keep the public informed.

The world boom in highway transportation that we are experiencing builds world wealth and revolutionizes our economic outlook. We look forward confidently toward an era of better living. We see no end to

Quick transportation has opened the markets of the world to all. Improvement in transportation is one of the powerful forces for the uplift

In all phases of highway work brains are in demand. We need better educated and better trained men at every level. The whole world is moving in the direction of better, safer highways.

Take a look to the future and forecast if you dare the traffic, the

population, the wealth and standard of living in the years ahead.

It has been determined beyond doubt that the same routes which best serve our peace time economy serve the nation best in time of war or other emergency.

Ploughing back \$100 million plus and more a year for the good of all Virginians is a real challenge and a splendid opportunity. Our problems will best be solved by able, devoted, talented career men who find life's richest rewards in service for Virginia.

A few years ago the Department of Highways celebrated its 50th or Golden Anniversary. Our friends told us that while we had made a start it was but a start. They predicted and I'm sure they are right, that we must do more work in the next 15 years than we did the first

Right here I'd like to pause to pay tribute to the citizens of Lexington, Buena Vista and Rockbridge County for their work for highway develop-

ment. Among those taking a prominent part we may name— Capt. Corse, Dr. Reid White, Capt. Letcher, Rice Hotinger, Frank

Moore, Willis Robertson, Stuart Moore, C. S. Glasgow and many others. In 1922 the Town Council decided it was time to try to satisfy demands for street improvement. Estimates were prepared and the citizens voted a bond issue for \$85,000. This was spent for curb and gutter and pavements and I believe proved a very worthwhile investment. Many problems are now apparent that could not be foreseen 38 years ago. If we planned

improvements today standards would be entirely different.
In 1925 a by-pass for Lexington was suggested. In 1955-30 years later a by-pass for U. S. 11 was opened to traffic. It very properly took time, study and meditation to decide on the course to be taken, but 30 years

is a long time in the 20th Century.

In order to make maps, put up signs, keep accounts and the like it is necessary that each section of highway have a positive means of identification. About 35 years ago in order to aid interstate travel the National State Highway Officials Association set up a U.S. numbered system of highways. Odd numbered routes run North and South, even numbered routes East and West. Roads of special significance end in 1 for North-South and O for East-West. Thus Lexington is fortunate in having two primary transcontinental Route 3, U.S. 11 and U.S. 60 crossing here. Few places in Virginia are so fortunate. The U.S. shield with the state name was adopted for convenience and does not mean that the Federal Government has either special interest or special funds in the Route. Though the U.S. Numbered System has been in effect for more than 30 years it is hard for us to realize that the Federal Government has nothing to do with it.

In Virginia all Primary Routes are numbered under 600. Thus in Rockbridge we have 11, 60, 501, 39, 251, 130, etc. as Primary Routes. All secondary or county roads begin with the number 600 and go as high as needed.

One of the facts that is becoming apparent is that we no longer need great centers of population or metropolitan areas even for heavy industry. Workers can live within one hundred miles of the plant they serve and go back and forth each day with a proper net of year round roads. The 41,000 miles of arterial roads is properly known as the Interstate and Defense Highway System. When you can go from Boston to Seattle without a traffic light on a highway 3 to 5 times as safe as the ordinary arterial, progress is being made.

In the last few years under the Revenue Bond Act of 1940 and other acts Virginia has expended or will expend over \$300 million for Bridge and Tunnel projects. The Highway Department sold \$95 million to finance the Hampton Roads Bridge Tunnel and other projects. The Elizabeth River Tunnel Commission soon will have 2 tunnels connecting Norfolk

and Portsmouth. Cost more than \$40 million.

The Chesapeake Bay Bridge and Tunnel is a 171/2 mile long project, expected to cost upwards of \$200 million and be ready for service in 3 years. The Richmond-Petersburg Turnpike is a \$70 million bottle-neck breaker from North Richmond to South of Petersburg. Motor vehicle registrations are up 3% in the last year. Total number about 1,400,000. The 7 cents gas tax produces about 85% of the state highway revenue. Motor vehicle fees 12% and other fees 3%—total over \$100 million a year.

Our people-particularly rural residents-are so dependent on the motor vehicle and the year round road that only a few days stoppage of

service could cause much hardship. About 1900 there were counted 300 sleighs in Harrisonburg on a court day. 50 years later there was only one sleigh in the city and that was a museum piece. We are happy that the Highway Department has a force of trained workers who can be used for relief and reserve wherever and whenever necessary.

Village roads and streets are part of the county system in which they are located, but incorporated towns and cities doing their own street work receive very substantial aid from highway funds. While there is never enough money to satisfy reasonable demands, it is true that each

kind of road receives attention.

Allocations to Rockbridge County's secondary roads for '60-'61 total \$507,985. When the county roads were taken over in 1932 less than 5% were hard surfaced. Now over 200 miles are hard-surfaced or more than 35%. Over 40% more have an all weather surface, so more than 75% are year round roads. Less than 25% are light surfaced, less than 1% unsurfaced.

One of the fine things the ladies clubs of Virginia can take credit for is the establishment of a landscape division under a competent landscape engineer. This division improves and beautifies the roadside while

improving drainage and promoting conservation.

Please take a good look at the change in the economic life of most communities under 1500 population. People shop in larger towns for most of the necessities of life. Yet these smaller communities are served by motor cars, trucks and buses as they never could have been served by railroads.

As economic development is accelerated higher standards of living

prevail.

It is probable that if we set up a goal for Rockbridge roads it would read something like this. "A reasonably adequate year round road to every reasonably located farm and rural dwelling in Rockbridge."

Some day our goal will be reached.

# ROCKBRIDGE HISTORICAL SOCIETY LIST OF MEMBERS

Miss Lucy Ackerly	223 W. Nelson St., Lexington, Va.
Mrs. L. W. Adams	107 Myers St., Lexington, Va.
Mrs. J. P. Alexander	Fairfield, Va. 207 Barclay Lane, Lexington, Va.
Miss Ellen G. Anderson	207 Barclay Lane, Lexington, Va.
Gen. James A. Anderson	Sunnyside, Lexington, Va.
Mrs. James A. Anderson	Sunnyside, Lexington, Va.
Mr. Harold Bailey	Route 2, Goshen, Va.
Mrs. Harold Bailey	Route 2, Goshen, Va.
Col. Thomas M. Barton	Rockbridge Baths, Va.
Mrs. Thomas M. Barton	Rockbridge Baths, Va.
W. Houston Barclay	Providence Hill, Johnstone St., Lex., Va.
Dr. W. G. Bean	108 White St., Lexington, Va.
Mr. John G. Bishop	Shadyside Ave., Nyack, N.Y.
Mrs. Jean S. (Shummay J.)	Bird
Miss Jessie C. Bowman	304 Jefferson St., Lexington, Va.
Mr. J. C. Borden	Box 606. Bluefield, W. Va.
Miss Elizabeth B. Bruce	16 Elliewood Ave., Charlottesville, Va.
Col. George M. Brooke, Jr.	405 Jackson Ave., Lexington, Va.
Mrs. George M. Brooke	405 Jackson Ave., Lexington, Va.
Mr. William Broadhurst	405 Jackson Ave., Lexington, Va. 4 Lewis St., Lexington, Va.
D. E. Brady, Jr.	602 Jackson Ave., Lexington, Va.
Mrs. W. L. Burks	610 Jackson Ave., Lexington, Va.
Mrs. L. W. Burlingame	"Nitta Yuma", Harrods Creek, Kentucky
Dr. Leslie L. Campbell	101 E. Washington St., Lexington, Va.
Dr. Leslie L. Campbell	101 E. Washington St., Lexington, Va.
Katie V. Campbell	Route 2. Lexington, Va.
Mrs. Andrew J. Cash	Southern Seminary, Buena Vista, Va.
Mrs. Malcolm Campbell, Sr.	602 Ross Road, Lexington, Va.
Col. William Couper,	106 White St., Lexington, Va.
Mrs. Grace Condon	Goshen, Va.
Mrs. Carl Cox	Col-Alto, Lexington, Va.

	Washington & Lee Campus, Lexington, Va. Washington & Lee Campus, Lexington, Va. 606 N. Main St., Lexington, Va. Buena Vista, Va. 307 S. Jefferson St., Lexington, Va. 619 Marshall St., Lexington, Va. 619 Marshall St., Lexington, Va. Route 5, Lexington, Va. Goshen, Va. 309 S. Jefferson St., Lex., Va.
Dr. Fred C. Cole	Washington & Lee Campus, Lexington, Va.
Mrs. Fred C. Cole	Washington & Lee Campus, Lexington, Va.
Dr. James R. Connor	606 N. Main St., Lexington, Va.
Mrs. Rosa B. Copper	Buena Vista, Va.
Mrs. James A. Cook	307 S. Jefferson St., Lexington, Va.
Rt. Rev. Lloyd R. Craighill	619 Marshall St., Lexington, Va.
Mrs. Lloyd R. Craighill	619 Marshall St., Lexington, Va.
Mrs. Claude Crist	Route 5, Lexington, Va.
Miss Marie Craft	Goshen, Va.
Mrs. Charles Davidson, Sr.	309 S. Jefferson St., Lex., Va.
Miss Katherine Davidson	3039 Que St., N.W., Apt. 26, Wash., D.C. Rockbridge Baths, Va.
James M. Davidson	Rockbridge Baths, Va.
Mrs. Cole Davis	5 Lewis St., Lexington, Va.
Gov. Price Daniel	Box 789 Liberty, Texas
Mag Duice Deniel	Dor 700 Liborty Torres
Dr. G. W. Diehl	Route 3. Lexington, Va.
Mrs. G. W. Diehl	Route 3, Lexington, Va.  Route 3, Lexington, Va.  Route 3, Lexington, Va.  2057 Chestnut Ave., Buena Vista, Va.  Box 775, Buena Vista, Va.
Mrs. T. B. Dillard	2057 Chestnut Ave., Buena Vista, Va.
Mrs. C. G. Dold	Box 775. Buena Vista, Va.
Mice Elizaboth Illinian	Route 's "Spring Form" Levington Va
Miss Henrietta Dunlap	24 Edmondson Ave., Lexington, Va.
Miss Lula Dunlan	24 Edmondson Ave. Lexington, Va.
Mrs H L Eichelberger	24 Edmondson Ave., Lexington, Va. 24 Edmondson Ave., Lexington, Va. 2501 S. Main St., Lexington, Va. The Plains, Va.
Mrs Mary D A Field	The Plains Va
Dr Marchall W Fishwick	PO Roy 406 Levington Va
Mrs Walter Flick	P.O. Box 496, Lexington, Va.  Route 2, Fairfield, Va.  9 Lewis St., (Box 1869), Lexington, Va.  9 Lewis St., (Box 1869), Lexington, Va.  "Enfield", Lexington, Va.
Mr Richard R Flatcher	O Lowis St (Roy 1860) Loyington Va
Mrs Pichard P Flotcher	0 Lowis St., (Box 1003), Lexington, Va.
Drawator Ford	"Enfield" Levington Va
Mrs D V Frotuell	9274 Ook Avo Puone Viete Va
Miss Ellinor D Codedon	2374 Oak Ave., Buena Vista, Va. 111 Lee Ave., Lexington, Va.
Miss Ellinor P. Gaustieli	2 Lowis Ct Lovington Va
Col Loglie Cormon	3 Lewis St., Lexington, Va. 410 V.M.I. Parade, Lexington, Va. 410 V.M.I. Parade, Lexington, Va.
Mrs. Loslin Cormon	410 V.M.I. Parade, Lexington, Va.
Miss Hattie Polle Cibson	2425 Wolnut Avo Puone Viete Va
Mr. Frank I Cillian	2435 Walnut Ave., Buena Vista, Va. Liberty Hall R'd., Lexington, Va. 8 Providence Hill (P.O. Box 612), Lex., Va.
Col D McClusm Cilliam	O Dravidana Hill (D.O. Day 619) Law Va.
Mr. I loud Clore	8 Providence Hill (P.O. Box 612), Lex., va.
Mr. Lloyd Glenn	Glasgow, Va.
Mrs. Helen Glenn	Glasgow, Va. Glasgow, Va. Glasgow, Va. Glasgow, Va. Box 838, Lexington, Va. Box 838, Lexington, Va.
Mrs. B. B. Glover	Down Och Lexington, va.
Maj. Chester B. Gooffick	Box 906, Buena Vista, Va.
Mrs. A. H. Griffith	Box 906, Buena Vista, Va.
Mr. B. F. Harlow	Box 723, Lexington, Va. 407 Jackson Ave., Lexington, Va. 16 Audubon Place, New Orleans 18, La.
Mrs. William O. Hay Jr	407 Jackson Ave., Lexington, va.
Mrs. Rudolf S. Hecht	16 Audubon Place, New Orleans 18, La.
Mrs. Gordon Heiner	601 Jackson Ave., Lexington, Va. 508 Highland Road, Lexington, Va.
Col. S. M. Heilin	508 Highland Road, Lexington, Va.
Mrs. W. W. Heifellinger	Brownsburg, Va. Brownsburg, Va. Route 1, Buena Vista, Va. 13 Jordan St., Lexington, Va. 13 Jordan St., Lexington, Va. Millboro, Va.
Mrs. Edward Henson, Sr.	Route 1, Buena Vista, Va.
Mr. J. W. Higgins, Sr	13 Jordan St., Lexington, Va.
Mrs. J. W. Higgins, Sr	13 Jordan St., Lexington, Va.
Dr. S. Palmer Hileman	Millboro, Va.
Mrs. Douglas Hill	309 E. 20th St., Buena Vista, Va.
Miss Jennie Hopkins	120 W. Nelson St., Lexington, Va.
Mr. Kent C. Horner	808 Lexington Ave., New York 21, N.Y.
Miss Guendolen Howe	108 Myers St., Lexington, Va.
Dr. W. D. Hoyt, Jr.	Box 179, Rockport, Mass.
Mr. W. H. Humphries	Route 1, Vesuvius, Va.
Dr. J. Morrison Hutcheson	Millboro, Va.  309 E. 20th St., Buena Vista, Va.  120 W. Nelson St., Lexington, Va.  808 Lexington Ave., New York 21, N.Y.  108 Myers St., Lexington, Va.  Box 179, Rockport, Mass.  Route 1, Vesuvius, Va.  Professional Bldg., Richmond, Va.  Stonewall St. Lexington, Va.
Mrs. Katherine G. Hutches	on Stonewall St., Lexington, Va. The Greenway, Baltimore, 18, Md.
Col. Wm. M. Hunley	The Greenway, Baltimore, 18, Md.

		400 0 75 1 01 7 1 1 77
	Mrs. John A. Johnstone	406 S. Main St., Lexington, Va.
	Miss Susan Johnstone	Lexington, Va.
	Miss Mabelle Jordan	Lexington, Va.  2068 Chestnut Ave., Buena Vista, Va. Stonewall Jackson Memorial, Inc., Lex., Va. 1621 State St., New Orleans, La.
	Mr Jay Johns	Stonewall Jackson Memorial Inc. Lex Va
	William F Johnston	1621 State St New Orleans La
	William E. Johnston	Corbon Vo.
	Mrs. Margaret Kerns	Goshen, Va. 6 Houston St., Lexington, Va. 208 Maiden Lane, Lexington, Va.
	Mr. C. Harold Lauck	6 Houston St., Lexington, Va.
	Gen. Seymour Letcher	208 Maiden Lane, Lexington, Va.
	Mr. R. N. Latture	507 Jackson Ave., Lexington, Va.
	Mrs. R. N. Latture	507 Jackson Ave., Lexington, Va.
	Dr. James G. Levburn	507 Jackson Ave., Lexington, Va. 507 Jackson Ave., Lexington, Va. 30 University Place, Lexington, Va.
	Mrs W B Longy Sr	2147 Manle Ave Ruena Vista Va
	W D Lomov In	2147 Maple Ave. Buena Vista, Va. 2147 Maple Ave., Buena Vista, Va. 1539 Philip St., New Orleans, La.
	W. B. Lomax, Jr.	1500 Dhilin Ct. Norm Orleans To
	Mrs. George K. Logan	1539 Philip St., New Orleans, La.
	Mrs. John Locher	Glasgow, Va.
	Mr. John Locher	Glasgow, Va. Glasgow, Va. Glasgow, Va. "Stono", Lexington, Va. 4 White St., Lexington, Va. Providence Hill, Lexington, Va.
	Mrs. Baldwin Locher	"Stono", Lexington, Va.
*	Mrs. Charles McCulloch	4 White St., Lexington, Va.
	Mr Lee M McLaughlin	Providence Hill Lexington Va
	Mrc I D McNulty	400 Altement Circle Charlottesville Va
	Migg Mony McNoil	10 Edmondon Avo Lovington Va
	MISS Mary McNell	408 Altamont Circle, Charlottesville, Va.  19 Edmondson Ave., Lexington, Va.  Overhill Drive, Lexington, Va.
	Mrs. W. A. McCluer	Overnili Drive, Lexington, va.
	Mr. Earl Mattingly	8 Lee Ave., Lexington, Va. 1856 Galena Ave., Montgomery, Ala. 5 Jordan St., Lexington, Va. S. Main St., Lexington, Va. S. Main St., Lexington, Va.
	Mrs. Paul S. Mertins	1856 Galena Ave., Montgomery, Ala.
	Miss Beatrice Miley	5 Jordan St., Lexington, Va.
	Mr Bruce Morrison	S Main St. Lexington, Va.
	Mrs Bruce Morrison	S Main St Levington Va
	Miss Contrado Morrison	211 Inelegon Ave Levington, Va.
	Mai Alan II Mamian	217 Lataban Assa Lawington, Va.
	Maj. Alex. H. Morrison	317 Letcher Ave., Lexington, va.
	Mr. W. Baxter Morrison	8 Houston St., Lexington, Va.
	Dr. Allen W. Moger	506 Jackson Ave., Lexington, Va.
	Dr. James Moser	S. Main St., Lexington, Va.  311 Jackson Ave., Lexington, Va.  317 Letcher Ave., Lexington, Va.  8 Houston St., Lexington, Va.  506 Jackson Ave., Lexington, Va.  Route 4, Lexington, Va.  327 Wister R'd., Wynnewood, Pa.  Southern Seminary, Buena Vista, Va.  8 Jordan St., Lexington, Va.  204 Jackson Ave., Lexington, Va.
	Mr. Morrison T. Moose	327 Wister R'd., Wynnewood, Pa.
	Mrs Lewis S Musgrove	Southern Seminary, Buena Vista, Va.
	Dr I I Murray	8 Jordan St Lexington Va
	Miss Evolun Nolson	204 Include St., Lexington, Va.
	Mas Everyll Nelson	204 Jackson Ave., Lexington, Va. 146 N. Crest Road, Chattanooga, Tenn.
	Mrs. Frank A. Nelson	146 N. Crest Road, Chattanooga, Tenn.
	Lt. Col. J. B. Newman	445 Institute Hill, Lexington, Va.
	Mrs. J. B. Newman	445 Institute Hill, Lexington, Va. 944 East 22nd. St., Buena Vista, Va.
	Mr. Alvin Oakes	944 East 22nd. St., Buena Vista, Va.
	Mrs. Alvin Oakes	944 East 22nd, St., Buena Vista, Va.
	Mr. Daniel Osburg	323 Overhill Drive, Lexington, Va.
	Mrs Daniel Oshurg	323 Overhill Drive, Lexington, Va. 323 Overhill Drive, Lexington, Va.
	Mrs. D. I. Dowton	Dow 700 Duone Viete Va
	Mrs. F. L. Faxion	Box 708, Buena Vista, Va.  Route 1, Buena Vista, Va.  Lexington, Va.  Route 1 (Box 152) Buena Vista, Va.  Clasgow, Va.
	Mr. E. K. Paxton	Route I, Buena Vista, Va.
	Mr. M. W. Paxton, Sr	Lexington, Va.
	Mr. Walter A. Paxton	Route 1 (Box 152) Buena Vista, Va.
	Mr. Garland Peed	Suite 1260, Plaza Hotel, New York 19, N.Y. Suite 1260, Plaza Hotel, New York 19, N.Y.
	Mrs Garland Poed	Suite 1260 Plaza Hotel New York 10 N V
	Mice Mary M Doniek	104 White St Levington Ve
	Mn I M Donner	104 White St., Lexington, Va. 1416 Masonic Temple, Staunton, Va.
	D. Marris P. D.	1410 Masonic Temple, Staunton, Va.
	Dr. Marvin B. Perry	University of Va., Charlottesville, Va.
	Mrs. Marvin B. Perry	University of Va., Charlottesville, Va. University of Va., Charlottesville, Va. Southern Seminary, Buena Vista, Va.
	Miss M. L. Racey	Southern Seminary, Buena Vista, Va.
	Mr. Henry L. Ravenhorst	202 Johnstone St., Lexington, Va. 202 Johnstone St., Lexington, Va.
	Mrs. Henry L. Ravenhorst	202 Johnstone St. Lexington Va
	Col H M Read	1 Lawis Ct Lavington Va
	Mrs H M Road	1 Lowis St., Lexington, Va.
	Mrs Edith W D Diaban	1 Lewis St., Lexington, Va. 1 Lewis St., Lexington, Va. 1 Lewis St., Lexington, Va. dson 5 Sellers Ave., Lexington, Va.
	Ma E C Deslace	uson beliers Ave., Lexington, Va.
	Mr. r. G. Rockwell	Route 4 Lexington, Va.

	Mrs F G Rockwell	Route 4 Lexington, Va.
	Mrs John D Rogers	PO Box 795 Lexington Va.
	Mrs. Milton B Rogers	P.O. Box 795, Lexington, Va. 108 Preston St., Lexington, Va.
	Mr U Duggell Doboy	Southern Seminary, Buena Vista, Va.
	Mrs. H. Russell Robey	Couthorn Comingery Duong Victo Va
	Mrs. H. Russell Robey	Southern Seminary, Buena Vista, Va. 310 Jackson Ave., Lexington, Va.
	Mrs. Barbara Ross	510 Jackson Ave., Lexington, va.
	Hon A. W. Robertson	502 Highland Ave., Lexington, Va.
	Mrs. E. A. Sale	311 Jefferson St., Lexington, Va. 585 Vinson St., Wytheville, Va.
	Mrs. Marion Sanders	585 Vinson St., Wytneville, Va.
	Miss Kathleen Saville	Route 3 Lexington, Va.
	Mrs. Lester L. Schnare	309 Jackson Ave., Lexington, Va.
	Dr. J. J. B. Sebastian	Providence Hill, Lexington, Va.
	Mrs. J. J. B. Sebastian	Providence Hill, Lexington, Va.
	Dr. Leon F. Sensabaugh	Providence Hill, Lexington, Va.  6 University Place, Lexington, Va.
	Mrs. Leon F. Sensabaugh	6 University Place, Lexington, Va. Route 1 Bedford, Va.
	Mr. T. B. Shackford	Route 1 Bedford, Va.
	Miss Virginia C. Shattuck	450 Warren St., Brookline, Mass.
	Gen. G. R. E. She!l	V.M.I. Parade, Lexington, Va.
	Mrs. G. R. E. Shell	450 Warren St., Brookline, Mass. V.M.I. Parade, Lexington, Va. V.M.I. Parade, Lexington, Va.
*	Miss Edmonia L. Smith	306 Jackson Ave., Lexington, Va.
*	Miss Nettie W Smith	306 Jackson Ave. Lexington, Va.
	Mrs Arthur J Smith	"Afteryears", Buena Vista, Va. 112 Preston St., Lexington, Va.
	Mrs Virginia Stover Smith	112 Preston St Lexington Va
	Mrs Max E Souder	2114 Walnut Ave., Buena Vista, Va. 1001 Viewmont Ave., N.W., Roanoke, Va. 306 Jackson Ave., Lexington, Va.
	Mrs Frank F Stone	1001 Viewmon't Ave NW Roanoke Va
	Mrs Edward Steidtman	306 Jackson Ave Levington Va
	Mr Samuel A Syme Ir	2310 Woodrow St., Durham, N.C.
	Mrs F P Tompkins	203 W. Preston St., Lexington, Va.
	Dr Charles W Turner	P.O. Box 878, Lexington, Va.
	Col C C Tutwilon In	Box 1159, Lexington, Va.
	Col A C I Tuelton	Route 2 Lexington, Va.
	Mma A C I Tuelcan	Doute 2 Lexington, Va.
	Mrs. A. S. J. Tucker	Route 2 Lexington, Va.
	Mrs. Finley waddell	Honeysuckle Hill, Lexington, Va.  Box 276, Huntington, West Va.
	Mr. George S. Wallace	Box 276, Huntington, West Va.
	Mrs. Curtis Walton	Natural Bridge, Va.
	Miss Hilda S. Warren	Box 82 Catawba St., Glasgow, Va.
	Mrs. E. L. Wayland	304 Jefferson St., Lexington, Va.
	Mr. Robert B. Weaver	304 Jefferson St., Lexington, Va. 510 Jackson Ave., Lexington, Va.
	Mrs. Paul Welles	3 Lewis St Lexington Va
	Rev. W. T. Williams	Appomattox, Va.
	Mrs. George Wiltshire	Appomattox, Va.  104 White St., Lexington, Va.
	Mr I. H. White	Diiono Victo Vo
	Mrs. L. E. White	Buena Vista. Va.
	Mrs. J. B. Wood	Goshen Va
	Dr. J. Leitch Wright Jr.	Buena Vista, Va. Buena Vista, Va. Goshen, Va. 306 N. Main St., Lexington, Va
*	Life Member	r terratura r

# ROCKBRIDGE HISTORICAL SOCIETY

# NECROLOGY — 1954-1960

Mrs. Jean Cameron Agnew	October, 1955
* Miss Judith Nicoll Anderson	March, 1960
* Miss Elizabeth Harvey Barclay	October, 1960
* Miss Mary Paxton Barclay	November, 1960
* Mrs. George Mercer Brooke	April 1957
Dr. William Cole Davis	February, 1955
Mrs. James M. Davidson	December, 1960
Col. Raymond E. Dixon	December, 1960
Mr. Max E. Souder	December, 1960
Dr. Walter A. Flick	
Mrs. W. A .Greaver	April 1957

D 01 D 11 1	0.11	40==
Dr. Glover D. Hancock  * Mrs. B. F. Harlow (Annette Houston)  Mr. C. Emmett Harper  Miss Ida Harlan	October	1955
Mr. C. Emmett Herner	December,	1050
Mica Ido Harlan	August	1059
Miss Mary Edna Halmas	Annil	1060
Miss Mary Edna Holmes  * Dr. James Lewis Howe	December	1055
Miss Agnes Irwin	August	1050
Miss Ann Robertson Johnstone	February	1060
Miss Ann Robertson Johnstone  * Mrs. Archibald Lee (Margaret Graham)  * Capt. Greenlee Davidson Letcher	October	1060
* Cont Granlas Davidson Latcher	Angust	1054
Dr W A McCluer	December	1058
Dr. W. A. McCluer  * Mrs. Rosa Tucker Mason	Toniomy	1061
Mr Honry Miloy	January	1055
Mr. Henry Miley	Tuno	1050
Mr. Bruce Patterson	Toniory	1060
Mr. Henning W. Prentiss, Jr.	Octobor	1050
Mr. Milton Rogers	Tonuony	1050
Rev. Philip Frank Price D.D.	January	1054
Mrs. Jone Company Const	Octobor	1056
Mrs. Jane Cameron Seay Mrs. Livingston Waddell Smith (Fannie Gay Catlett)	A nmil	1056
Mr. Loston Cohnana	Contembor	1055
Mr. Lester Schnare  * Mr. Carrington Cabell Tutwiler	Moreh	1056
Miss Madeline Willis	Docombon	1055
* Charter Member.	December	1900
Charter Member.		
Mrs. Winchrop Akdrich Mrs. Sheldon Whitehouse Mrs. John Merritt Mrs. John Merritt Mrs. John Merritt		
LIFE MEMBERS	A Terrore	100
Mrs. Winthrop Aldrich	New	York
Mrs. Sheldon Whitehouse	New	York
Mrs. John Merritt	tonington, (	Conn.
Mrs. Charles McCulloch	. Lexington	, va.
Miss Edmonia Lewis Smith	Lexington	, Va.
Miss Nettie Waddell Smith	Lexington	, Va.
NEW MORNING WILL THE TANK MARKET		
HONORARY MEMBERS		
Dr. Leslie Lyle Campbell Mrs. Augusta B. Fothergill 1011 Grace St Miss Susan Johnstone	Lexington	, Va.
Mrs. Augusta B. Fothergill 1011 Grace St	Richmond	l, Va.
Miss Susan Johnstone	Lexington	. Va.
Mr. Franklin Morgan	Roanoke	. Va.
Mr. Franklin Morgan Mr. Chauncey M. McCormick	Chicago	o. Ill.
Mrs. Chauncey M. McCormick	Chicago	o. Ill.
		,
DOGUDDIDGE HIGMODICAL GOGLE	mx.	
ROCKBRIDGE HISTORICAL SOCIE	TY	
LEXINGTON, VA.		
ANNUAL STATEMENT		
JAN. 1, 1960 — DEC. 31, 1960		
1000		
1960 Jan. 1 To Balance	¢1 9	00 00
Jan. 1 10 Dalance	\$1,3	
To dues collected		40.00
To cash one Volume Proceedings		1.50
To cash Annual Banquet	l	62.00
To cash July Dinner Meeting	1	41.00
	\$1,9	52.72
EVDENCEC DAID.	φ1,8	04.12
1960		
By Lexington Gazette postal cards		
DJ Lexington Gazette postar cards		

printing, under observe,	\$101.76	3
printing, addressing, mailing &c.  By Town of Lexington, Water-Sewer tax	23.88	3
By Va. Gas Distribution Corp. gas	30 06	3
By P. O. Box rent	6.80	18 ,550
By Va. Electric & Power Co. service	18.00	
By Cataloging books	. 44.19	
By Repairing locks at Castle	4.50	
By Cleaning Castle, yard, walk &c.	52.00	
By Cleaning Castle, yard, walk &c.  By Fire Ins. — Castle Bldg.	21.48	3
By Stamped envelopes and postage for		
Corresponding Secretary	10.20	)
Corresponding Secretary  By Amt. banquets &c.	321.10	)
By Plumbing in re draining system for		
cold weather and turning on water,		
checking system in Spring	9.00	
By Flowers used at Annual Banquet	5.00	648.87
1960 Dec. 31 BALANCE	\$1	303.85
Respectful	ly subm	itted,
Lula S. Dunla	ap, Treas	surer
de Connic Can de la contra della contra della contra de la contra de la contra de la contra della contra dell		
ROCKBRIDGE HISTORICAL SOCIET	Y	
LEXINGTON, VA.		
ANNUAL COLUMNIA		
ANNUAL STATEMENT		
DEC. 31, 1958 — DEC. 31, 1959		
Dec. 31 To Balance	\$1	,478.91
To dues collected		000.00
		328 00
To amount collected for Annual Banquet	egyeraa	328.00 183.00
To amount collected for Annual Banquet		183.00
To amount collected for Annual Banquet To gift from a visitor		183.00 5.00
To amount collected for Annual Banquet To gift from a visitor To amount from The Book Shop, being net proceeds sale books		183.00 5.00
To amount collected for Annual Banquet To gift from a visitor To amount from The Book Shop, being net proceeds sale books		183.00 5.00 46.00
To amount collected for Annual Banquet To gift from a visitor To amount from The Book Shop, being net proceeds sale books  EXPENSES PAID:	\$2	183.00 5.00 46.00 2,039.91
To amount collected for Annual Banquet To gift from a visitor To amount from The Book Shop, being net proceeds sale books  EXPENSES PAID:	\$2	183.00 5.00 46.00 2,039.91
To amount collected for Annual Banquet To gift from a visitor To amount from The Book Shop, being net proceeds sale books  EXPENSES PAID:	\$2	183.00 5.00 46.00 2,039.91
To amount collected for Annual Banquet To gift from a visitor To amount from The Book Shop, being net proceeds sale books  EXPENSES PAID: The Lexington Gazette, printing, adressing, mailing and cost of cards Stamped envelopes	\$2 \$ 61.83 9.28	183.00 5.00 46.00 2,039.91
To amount collected for Annual Banquet To gift from a visitor To amount from The Book Shop, being net proceeds sale books  EXPENSES PAID: The Lexington Gazette, printing, adressing, mailing and cost of cards Stamped envelopes Annual Banquet 104 plates @ \$1.75	\$2 \$ 61.83 9.28	183.00 5.00 46.00 2,039.91
To amount collected for Annual Banquet To gift from a visitor To amount from The Book Shop, being net proceeds sale books  EXPENSES PAID: The Lexington Gazette, printing, adressing, mailing and cost of cards Stamped envelopes Annual Banquet 104 plates @ \$1.75	\$2 \$ 61.83 9.28	183.00 5.00 46.00 2,039.91
To amount collected for Annual Banquet To gift from a visitor To amount from The Book Shop, being net proceeds sale books  EXPENSES PAID: The Lexington Gazette, printing, adressing, mailing and cost of cards Stamped envelopes Annual Banquet 104 plates @ \$1.75 Work at Castle, cleaning building, trimming shrubs and cleaning vard	\$2 \$ 61.83 9.28 182.00	183.00 5.00 46.00 2,039.91
To amount collected for Annual Banquet To gift from a visitor To amount from The Book Shop, being net proceeds sale books  EXPENSES PAID: The Lexington Gazette, printing, adressing, mailing and cost of cards Stamped envelopes Annual Banquet 104 plates @ \$1.75 Work at Castle, cleaning building, trimming shrubs and cleaning vard	\$2 \$ 61.83 9.28 182.00	183.00 5.00 46.00 2,039.91
To amount collected for Annual Banquet To gift from a visitor To amount from The Book Shop, being net proceeds sale books  EXPENSES PAID: The Lexington Gazette, printing, adressing, mailing and cost of cards Stamped envelopes Annual Banquet 104 plates @ \$1.75 Work at Castle, cleaning building, trimming shrubs and cleaning vard	\$2 \$ 61.83 9.28 182.00	183.00 5.00 46.00 2,039.91
To amount collected for Annual Banquet To gift from a visitor To amount from The Book Shop, being net proceeds sale books  EXPENSES PAID: The Lexington Gazette, printing, adressing, mailing and cost of cards Stamped envelopes Annual Banquet 104 plates @ \$1.75 Work at Castle, cleaning building, trimming shrubs and cleaning yard and side walk Erecting the Archibald Alexander	\$2 \$ 61.83 9.28 182.00 98.00	183.00 5.00 46.00 2,039.91
To amount collected for Annual Banquet To gift from a visitor To amount from The Book Shop, being net proceeds sale books  EXPENSES PAID: The Lexington Gazette, printing, adressing, mailing and cost of cards Stamped envelopes Annual Banquet 104 plates @ \$1.75 Work at Castle, cleaning building, trimming shrubs and cleaning yard and side walk Erecting the Archibald Alexander Marker, building stone base to preserve same &c.	\$2 \$ 61.83 9.28 182.00 98.00	183.00 5.00 46.00 2,039.91
To amount collected for Annual Banquet To gift from a visitor To amount from The Book Shop, being net proceeds sale books  EXPENSES PAID: The Lexington Gazette, printing, adressing, mailing and cost of cards Stamped envelopes Annual Banquet 104 plates @ \$1.75 Work at Castle, cleaning building, trimming shrubs and cleaning yard and side walk Erecting the Archibald Alexander Marker, building stone base to preserve same &c.	\$2 \$ 61.83 9.28 182.00 98.00	183.00 5.00 46.00 2,039.91
To amount collected for Annual Banquet To gift from a visitor To amount from The Book Shop, being net proceeds sale books  EXPENSES PAID:  The Lexington Gazette, printing, adressing, mailing and cost of cards Stamped envelopes Annual Banquet 104 plates @ \$1.75 Work at Castle, cleaning building, trimming shrubs and cleaning yard and side walk Erecting the Archibald Alexander Marker, building stone base to preserve same &c. Painting roof of Castle, including materials	\$2 \$ 61.83 9.28 182.00 98.00	183.00 5.00 46.00 2,039.91
To amount collected for Annual Banquet To gift from a visitor To amount from The Book Shop, being net proceeds sale books  EXPENSES PAID:  The Lexington Gazette, printing, adressing, mailing and cost of cards Stamped envelopes Annual Banquet 104 plates @ \$1.75 Work at Castle, cleaning building, trimming shrubs and cleaning yard and side walk Erecting the Archibald Alexander Marker, building stone base to preserve same &c. Painting roof of Castle, including materials	\$2 \$ 61.83 9.28 182.00 98.00	183.00 5.00 46.00 2,039.91
To amount collected for Annual Banquet To gift from a visitor To amount from The Book Shop, being net proceeds sale books  EXPENSES PAID: The Lexington Gazette, printing, adressing, mailing and cost of cards Stamped envelopes Annual Banquet 104 plates @ \$1.75 Work at Castle, cleaning building, trimming shrubs and cleaning yard and side walk Erecting the Archibald Alexander Marker, building stone base to preserve same &c. Painting roof of Castle, including materials Traveling expenses Miss Lois Moore, April meeting.	\$2 \$ 61.83 9.28 182.00 98.00 133.50 95.00 7.00	183.00 5.00 46.00 2,039.91
To amount collected for Annual Banquet To gift from a visitor To amount from The Book Shop, being net proceeds sale books  EXPENSES PAID: The Lexington Gazette, printing, adressing, mailing and cost of cards Stamped envelopes Annual Banquet 104 plates @ \$1.75 Work at Castle, cleaning building, trimming shrubs and cleaning yard and side walk Erecting the Archibald Alexander Marker, building stone base to preserve same &c. Painting roof of Castle, including materials Traveling expenses Miss Lois Moore, April meeting, Town of Lexington water tax &c.	\$28 \$ 61.83 \$ 9.28 \$ 182.00 \$ 98.00 \$ 95.00 \$ 7.00 \$ 23.88	183.00 5.00 46.00 2,039.91
To amount collected for Annual Banquet To gift from a visitor To amount from The Book Shop, being net proceeds sale books  EXPENSES PAID: The Lexington Gazette, printing, adressing, mailing and cost of cards Stamped envelopes Annual Banquet 104 plates @ \$1.75 Work at Castle, cleaning building, trimming shrubs and cleaning yard and side walk Erecting the Archibald Alexander Marker, building stone base to preserve same &c. Painting roof of Castle, including materials Traveling expenses Miss Lois Moore, April meeting, Town of Lexington water tax &c. Virginia Gas Dist. Corp.	\$28 61.83 9.28 182.00 98.00 95.00 7.00 23.88 19.19	183.00 5.00 46.00 2,039.91
To amount collected for Annual Banquet To gift from a visitor To amount from The Book Shop, being net proceeds sale books  EXPENSES PAID: The Lexington Gazette, printing, adressing, mailing and cost of cards Stamped envelopes Annual Banquet 104 plates @ \$1.75 Work at Castle, cleaning building, trimming shrubs and cleaning yard and side walk Erecting the Archibald Alexander Marker, building stone base to preserve same &c. Painting roof of Castle, including materials Traveling expenses Miss Lois Moore, April meeting, Town of Lexington water tax &c. Virginia Gas Dist. Corp.	\$28 61.83 9.28 182.00 98.00 95.00 7.00 23.88 19.19	183.00 5.00 46.00 2,039.91
To amount collected for Annual Banquet To gift from a visitor To amount from The Book Shop, being net proceeds sale books  EXPENSES PAID: The Lexington Gazette, printing, adressing, mailing and cost of cards Stamped envelopes Annual Banquet 104 plates @ \$1.75 Work at Castle, cleaning building, trimming shrubs and cleaning yard and side walk Erecting the Archibald Alexander Marker, building stone base to preserve same &c. Painting roof of Castle, including materials Traveling expenses Miss Lois Moore, April meeting, Town of Lexington water tax &c. Virginia Gas Dist. Corp.	\$28 61.83 9.28 182.00 98.00 95.00 7.00 23.88 19.19	183.00 5.00 46.00 2,039.91
To amount collected for Annual Banquet To gift from a visitor To amount from The Book Shop, being net proceeds sale books  EXPENSES PAID: The Lexington Gazette, printing, adressing, mailing and cost of cards Stamped envelopes Annual Banquet 104 plates @ \$1.75 Work at Castle, cleaning building, trimming shrubs and cleaning yard and side walk Erecting the Archibald Alexander Marker, building stone base to preserve same &c. Painting roof of Castle, including materials Traveling expenses Miss Lois Moore, April meeting, Town of Lexington water tax &c. Virginia Gas Dist. Corp.	\$28 61.83 9.28 182.00 98.00 95.00 7.00 23.88 19.19	183.00 5.00 46.00 2,039.91
To amount collected for Annual Banquet To gift from a visitor To amount from The Book Shop, being net proceeds sale books  EXPENSES PAID: The Lexington Gazette, printing, adressing, mailing and cost of cards Stamped envelopes Annual Banquet 104 plates @ \$1.75 Work at Castle, cleaning building, trimming shrubs and cleaning yard and side walk Erecting the Archibald Alexander Marker, building stone base to preserve same &c. Painting roof of Castle, including materials Traveling expenses Miss Lois Moore, April meeting, Town of Lexington water tax &c. Virginia Gas Dist. Corp. Virginia Electric & Power Co. serv. Cost removing one Electric meter Post Office Box Rent	\$2 \$ 61.83 9.28 182.00 98.00 133.50 95.00 7.00 23.88 19.19 34.50 6.00 6.80	183.00 5.00 46.00 2,039.91
To amount collected for Annual Banquet To gift from a visitor To amount from The Book Shop, being net proceeds sale books  EXPENSES PAID: The Lexington Gazette, printing, adressing, mailing and cost of cards Stamped envelopes Annual Banquet 104 plates @ \$1.75 Work at Castle, cleaning building, trimming shrubs and cleaning yard and side walk Erecting the Archibald Alexander Marker, building stone base to preserve same &c. Painting roof of Castle, including materials Traveling expenses Miss Lois Moore, April meeting, Town of Lexington water tax &c. Virginia Gas Dist. Corp.	\$2 \$ 61.83 9.28 182.00 98.00 95.00 7.00 23.88 19.19 34.50 6.00 6.80 40.67	183.00 5.00 46.00 2,039.91

	on water		731.69
Dec. 31	BALANCE	\$1,308.2	2
		Respectfully subt Lula S. Dunlap, T	mitted, Teasurer
	08.3	Dula S. Dullap, 1	i casui ci
	ROCKBRIDGE HISTORICA	L SOCIETY	
	LEXINGTON, VIRGIN		
	A BIBILLA T CON A CONTRACT		
	Jan. 1, 1958 — Dec. 31,		
1958	Jan. 1, 1958 — Dec. 51,	1990	
Jan. 1	Balance		\$1,561.40
	To dues collected		397.00
	To cash for Proceedings To cash The Book Shop for sale Dr. 7	Compline book	7.00 60.00
	To amt. collected for banquets,	tompams book	00.00
	Annual		
	Tribrook Country Club July	171.50	271.25
		todina/cook	\$2,296.71
EXPEN	SES:		φ=,=σσ
By	paid as follows:	STATE A	
	Lexington Gazette, printing, address cost cards, mailing &c.	ing,	
	Stamped envelopes	5.46	
	Cataloging and book binding		
	Bronze Tablet "Archibald Alexander		
	Marker"	128.99	
	Ins. prem. Fine Arts Policy Ewing Studio Acct.	16.92 8.50	N OT
	For very old Man of Rockbridge Co.	26 00	
	Expenses &c. April meeting, Musica	l 25.75	
	P. O. Box rent	6.20	
	Steel Filing Cabinet	44.75	
	Cost two banquets	283.25	
	Town of Lexington Water tax &c.	23.88	
	Vas. Gas Dist. Corp. service Va. Electric & Power		
1958	va. Electric & Fower		017.0
Dec. 31			
		Respectfully sub	mitted,
	toloraraily his	Lula S. Dunlap, 7	reasure
	01 6888 94	rker, building stor	
	ROCKBRIDGE HISTORICA	L SOCIETY	
	LEXINGTON, VIRGIN	NIA	
	ANNUAL STATEMI	ENT	
	DEC OF 1050 DEC O	1 1055	
1956	DEC. 27, 1956 — DEC. 3	1, 1957	
Dec. 27	To balance		\$1,457.63
1957	To dues collected		353.0
	To amt. collected Jan. Banquet	A A Mark I was I	122.0
	To amt. collected Jan. Bandilet		1.12.11

EXPEN	SES:		
	By Lexington Gazette, printing		
	cards, addressing &c. \$38.86		
	Also printing 300 Bill Forms 7.50	46.36	
	By Stamped Envelopes	9.10	
	By Town of Lexington, Water sewer tax	19.60	
	By Va. Gas Dist. Corp. gas	18.10	
	By P. O. Box Rent	6.00	
	By V.E.P. Co.	36.00	
	By Prem. Fire Ins. Policy, Bldg.	12.00	
	By Harrison Studio making copy	13.00	
	from a book (Dr. Turner)	7 50	
	Party C. Proper Circ. Turner)	7.50	
	By U. S. Bronze Sign Co., Inc., tablet "Margaret J. Preston"	05.00	
	tablet "Margaret J. Preston"	35.88	
	By Cleaning at Castle	21.63	
	By Plumbing in re preparation		
	By Plumbing in re preparation for winter	13.00	
	By Annual Banquet at Mayflower		
	100 11 0 11 11		
	100 plates @ \$1.50 ordered by Miss E. Barclay	150.00	
	By Flowers used at Banquet	5.00	
	By Dr. Edwin Hemphill honorarium	25.00	406.1
1957	by Dr. Edwin Hemphin honorarium	. 20.00	100.1
Dec 31	BALANCE \$1	561 46	
	ROCKBRIDGE HISTORICAL SOCIET	Y	
	ROCKBRIDGE HISTORICAL SOCIET	Y	
	LEXINGTON, VIRGINIA	Y	
	LEXINGTON, VIRGINIA	Y	
	LEXINGTON, VIRGINIA ANNUAL STATEMENT	Y	
1055	LEXINGTON, VIRGINIA	Y	
	LEXINGTON, VIRGINIA ANNUAL STATEMENT Dec. 31, 1955 — Dec. 27, 1956	Y	
	LEXINGTON, VIRGINIA ANNUAL STATEMENT Dec. 31, 1955 — Dec. 27, 1956 To balance in The Peoples National Bank,	Y	
	LEXINGTON, VIRGINIA ANNUAL STATEMENT  Dec. 31, 1955 — Dec. 27, 1956  To balance in The Peoples National Bank, Lexington, Va., Checking Account, (Also	Y	
	LEXINGTON, VIRGINIA ANNUAL STATEMENT  Dec. 31, 1955 — Dec. 27, 1956  To balance in The Peoples National Bank, Lexington, Va., Checking Account, (Also per statement Col. Carrington C. Tutwiler, Jr.,		
	LEXINGTON, VIRGINIA ANNUAL STATEMENT  Dec. 31, 1955 — Dec. 27, 1956  To balance in The Peoples National Bank, Lexington, Va., Checking Account, (Also per statement Col. Carrington C. Tutwiler, Jr.,		1432.58
	LEXINGTON, VIRGINIA ANNUAL STATEMENT  Dec. 31, 1955 — Dec. 27, 1956  To balance in The Peoples National Bank, Lexington, Va., Checking Account, (Also	\$	
	LEXINGTON, VIRGINIA ANNUAL STATEMENT  Dec. 31, 1955 — Dec. 27, 1956  To balance in The Peoples National Bank, Lexington, Va., Checking Account, (Also per statement Col. Carrington C. Tutwiler, Jr., former Treas.)  Dues collected	\$	112.00
	LEXINGTON, VIRGINIA ANNUAL STATEMENT  Dec. 31, 1955 — Dec. 27, 1956  To balance in The Peoples National Bank, Lexington, Va., Checking Account, (Also per statement Col. Carrington C. Tutwiler, Jr., former Treas.)  Dues collected Sale proceedings &c	\$	112.00 18.75
	LEXINGTON, VIRGINIA ANNUAL STATEMENT  Dec. 31, 1955 — Dec. 27, 1956  To balance in The Peoples National Bank, Lexington, Va., Checking Account, (Also per statement Col. Carrington C. Tutwiler, Jr., former Treas.)  Dues collected Sale proceedings &c Dinner Jan. 1956 — 102 plates	\$	112.00 18.75 153.00
	LEXINGTON, VIRGINIA ANNUAL STATEMENT  Dec. 31, 1955 — Dec. 27, 1956  To balance in The Peoples National Bank, Lexington, Va., Checking Account, (Also per statement Col. Carrington C. Tutwiler, Jr., former Treas.)  Dues collected Sale proceedings &c Dinner Jan. 1956 — 102 plates G. Bond collected at maturity \$100.00 int. 1.25	\$	112.00 18.75 153.00 101.25
	LEXINGTON, VIRGINIA ANNUAL STATEMENT  Dec. 31, 1955 — Dec. 27, 1956  To balance in The Peoples National Bank, Lexington, Va., Checking Account, (Also per statement Col. Carrington C. Tutwiler, Jr., former Treas.)  Dues collected Sale proceedings &c Dinner Jan. 1956 — 102 plates G. Bond collected at maturity \$100.00 int. 1.25 Contribution Mr. Bailey J. Locher	\$	112.00 18.75 153.00 101.25 25.00
	LEXINGTON, VIRGINIA ANNUAL STATEMENT  Dec. 31, 1955 — Dec. 27, 1956  To balance in The Peoples National Bank, Lexington, Va., Checking Account, (Also per statement Col. Carrington C. Tutwiler, Jr., former Treas.)  Dues collected Sale proceedings &c Dinner Jan. 1956 — 102 plates G. Bond collected at maturity \$100.00 int. 1.25	\$	1432.58 112.00 18.78 153.00 101.25 25.00 5.00
	LEXINGTON, VIRGINIA ANNUAL STATEMENT  Dec. 31, 1955 — Dec. 27, 1956  To balance in The Peoples National Bank, Lexington, Va., Checking Account, (Also per statement Col. Carrington C. Tutwiler, Jr., former Treas.)  Dues collected Sale proceedings &c Dinner Jan. 1956 — 102 plates G. Bond collected at maturity \$100.00 int. 1.25 Contribution Mr. Bailey J. Locher Memorial contribution	\$	112.00 18.75 153.00 101.25 25.00 5.00
Dec. 31	LEXINGTON, VIRGINIA ANNUAL STATEMENT  Dec. 31, 1955 — Dec. 27, 1956  To balance in The Peoples National Bank, Lexington, Va., Checking Account, (Also per statement Col. Carrington C. Tutwiler, Jr., former Treas.)  Dues collected Sale proceedings &c Dinner Jan. 1956 — 102 plates G. Bond collected at maturity \$100.00 int. 1.25 Contribution Mr. Bailey J. Locher Memorial contribution  SES:	\$	112.00 18.75 153.00 101.25 25.00
Dec. 31	LEXINGTON, VIRGINIA ANNUAL STATEMENT  Dec. 31, 1955 — Dec. 27, 1956  To balance in The Peoples National Bank, Lexington, Va., Checking Account, (Also per statement Col. Carrington C. Tutwiler, Jr., former Treas.)  Dues collected Sale proceedings &c Dinner Jan. 1956 — 102 plates G. Bond collected at maturity \$100.00 int. 1.25 Contribution Mr. Bailey J. Locher Memorial contribution  SES:	\$	112.00 18.75 153.00 101.25 25.00 5.00
Dec. 31	LEXINGTON, VIRGINIA ANNUAL STATEMENT  Dec. 31, 1955 — Dec. 27, 1956  To balance in The Peoples National Bank, Lexington, Va., Checking Account, (Also per statement Col. Carrington C. Tutwiler, Jr., former Treas.)  Dues collected Sale proceedings &c Dinner Jan. 1956 — 102 plates G. Bond collected at maturity \$100.00 int. 1.25 Contribution Mr. Bailey J. Locher Memorial contribution  SES: Water Tax &c.	\$ 19.60	112.00 18.75 153.00 101.25 25.00 5.00
Dec. 31	LEXINGTON, VIRGINIA ANNUAL STATEMENT  Dec. 31, 1955 — Dec. 27, 1956  To balance in The Peoples National Bank, Lexington, Va., Checking Account, (Also per statement Col. Carrington C. Tutwiler, Jr., former Treas.)  Dues collected Sale proceedings &c Dinner Jan. 1956 — 102 plates G. Bond collected at maturity \$100.00 int. 1.25 Contribution Mr. Bailey J. Locher Memorial contribution  SES: Water Tax &c.	\$ 19.60 21.36	112.00 18.75 153.00 101.25 25.00 5.00
Dec. 31	LEXINGTON, VIRGINIA ANNUAL STATEMENT  Dec. 31, 1955 — Dec. 27, 1956  To balance in The Peoples National Bank, Lexington, Va., Checking Account, (Also per statement Col. Carrington C. Tutwiler, Jr., former Treas.)  Dues collected Sale proceedings &c Dinner Jan. 1956 — 102 plates G. Bond collected at maturity \$100.00 int. 1.25 Contribution Mr. Bailey J. Locher Memorial contribution  SES: Water Tax &c. Gas Electric Power Co.	\$ 19.60 21.36 36.00	112.00 18.75 153.00 101.25 25.00 5.00
Dec. 31	LEXINGTON, VIRGINIA ANNUAL STATEMENT  Dec. 31, 1955 — Dec. 27, 1956  To balance in The Peoples National Bank, Lexington, Va., Checking Account, (Also per statement Col. Carrington C. Tutwiler, Jr., former Treas.)  Dues collected Sale proceedings &c Dinner Jan. 1956 — 102 plates G. Bond collected at maturity \$100.00 int. 1.25 Contribution Mr. Bailey J. Locher Memorial contribution  SES: Water Tax &c. Gas Electric Power Co. Insurance	\$ 19.60 21.36 36.00 31.25	112.00 18.75 153.00 101.25 25.00 5.00
Dec. 31	LEXINGTON, VIRGINIA ANNUAL STATEMENT  Dec. 31, 1955 — Dec. 27, 1956  To balance in The Peoples National Bank, Lexington, Va., Checking Account, (Also per statement Col. Carrington C. Tutwiler, Jr., former Treas.) Dues collected Sale proceedings &c Dinner Jan. 1956 — 102 plates G. Bond collected at maturity \$100.00 int. 1.25 Contribution Mr. Bailey J. Locher Memorial contribution  SES: Water Tax &c. Gas Electric Power Co. Insurance Prize	\$ 19.60 21.36 36.00 31.25 15.00	112.00 18.75 153.00 101.25 25.00 5.00
Dec. 31	LEXINGTON, VIRGINIA ANNUAL STATEMENT  Dec. 31, 1955 — Dec. 27, 1956  To balance in The Peoples National Bank, Lexington, Va., Checking Account, (Also per statement Col. Carrington C. Tutwiler, Jr., former Treas.)  Dues collected Sale proceedings &c Dinner Jan. 1956 — 102 plates G. Bond collected at maturity \$100.00 int. 1.25 Contribution Mr. Bailey J. Locher Memorial contribution  SES: Water Tax &c. Gas Electric Power Co. Insurance Prize Box Rent	\$ 19.60 21.36 36.00 31.25 15.00 3.00	112.00 18.75 153.00 101.25 25.00 5.00
Dec. 31	LEXINGTON, VIRGINIA ANNUAL STATEMENT  Dec. 31, 1955 — Dec. 27, 1956  To balance in The Peoples National Bank, Lexington, Va., Checking Account, (Also per statement Col. Carrington C. Tutwiler, Jr., former Treas.)  Dues collected Sale proceedings &c Dinner Jan. 1956 — 102 plates G. Bond collected at maturity \$100.00 int. 1.25 Contribution Mr. Bailey J. Locher Memorial contribution  SES: Water Tax &c. Gas Electric Power Co. Insurance Prize Box Rent Gazette, postals, printing &c.	\$ 19.60 21.36 36.00 31.25 15.00 3.00 49.14	112.00 18.75 153.00 101.25 25.00 5.00
Dec. 31	LEXINGTON, VIRGINIA ANNUAL STATEMENT  Dec. 31, 1955 — Dec. 27, 1956  To balance in The Peoples National Bank, Lexington, Va., Checking Account, (Also per statement Col. Carrington C. Tutwiler, Jr., former Treas.)  Dues collected Sale proceedings &c Dinner Jan. 1956 — 102 plates G. Bond collected at maturity \$100.00 int. 1.25 Contribution Mr. Bailey J. Locher Memorial contribution  SES: Water Tax &c. Gas Electric Power Co. Insurance Prize Box Rent Gazette, postals, printing &c. Plumber	\$ 19.60 21.36 36.00 31.25 15.00 3.00 49.14 8.90	112.00 18.75 153.00 101.25 25.00 5.00
Dec. 31	LEXINGTON, VIRGINIA ANNUAL STATEMENT  Dec. 31, 1955 — Dec. 27, 1956  To balance in The Peoples National Bank, Lexington, Va., Checking Account, (Also per statement Col. Carrington C. Tutwiler, Jr., former Treas.)  Dues collected Sale proceedings &c Dinner Jan. 1956 — 102 plates G. Bond collected at maturity \$100.00 int. 1.25 Contribution Mr. Bailey J. Locher Memorial contribution  SES: Water Tax &c. Gas Electric Power Co. Insurance Prize Box Rent Gazette, postals, printing &c. Plumber Cataloging books	\$ 19.60 21.36 36.00 31.25 15.00 3.00 49.14	112.00 18.75 153.00 101.25 25.00 5.00
Dec. 31	LEXINGTON, VIRGINIA ANNUAL STATEMENT  Dec. 31, 1955 — Dec. 27, 1956  To balance in The Peoples National Bank, Lexington, Va., Checking Account, (Also per statement Col. Carrington C. Tutwiler, Jr., former Treas.) Dues collected Sale proceedings &c Dinner Jan. 1956 — 102 plates G. Bond collected at maturity \$100.00 int. 1.25 Contribution Mr. Bailey J. Locher Memorial contribution  SES: Water Tax &c. Gas Electric Power Co. Insurance Prize Box Rent Gazette, postals, printing &c. Plumber Cataloging books Copies documents	\$ 19.60 21.36 36.00 31.25 15.00 3.00 49.14 8.90	112.00 18.75 153.00 101.25 25.00 5.00
Dec. 31	LEXINGTON, VIRGINIA ANNUAL STATEMENT  Dec. 31, 1955 — Dec. 27, 1956  To balance in The Peoples National Bank, Lexington, Va., Checking Account, (Also per statement Col. Carrington C. Tutwiler, Jr., former Treas.) Dues collected Sale proceedings &c Dinner Jan. 1956 — 102 plates G. Bond collected at maturity \$100.00 int. 1.25 Contribution Mr. Bailey J. Locher Memorial contribution  SES: Water Tax &c. Gas Electric Power Co. Insurance Prize Box Rent Gazette, postals, printing &c. Plumber Cataloging books Copies documents	\$ 19.60 21.36 36.00 31.25 15.00 3.00 49.14 8.90 17.50 9.00	112.00 18.75 153.00 101.25 25.00 5.00
1955 Dec. 31	LEXINGTON, VIRGINIA ANNUAL STATEMENT  Dec. 31, 1955 — Dec. 27, 1956  To balance in The Peoples National Bank, Lexington, Va., Checking Account, (Also per statement Col. Carrington C. Tutwiler, Jr., former Treas.)  Dues collected Sale proceedings &c Dinner Jan. 1956 — 102 plates G. Bond collected at maturity \$100.00 int. 1.25 Contribution Mr. Bailey J. Locher Memorial contribution  SES: Water Tax &c. Gas Electric Power Co. Insurance Prize Box Rent Gazette, postals, printing &c. Plumber Cataloging books	\$ 19.60 21.36 36.00 31.25 15.00 3.00 49.14 8.90 17.50	112.00 18.75 153.00 101.25 25.00 5.00

(Same as Bank statement Dec. 27, 1956)

Respectfully submitted. Lula S. Dunlap, Treasurer

#### ACCOMPLISHMENTS

To accurately measure the value and meaning of a thriving historical society to its members or the area is difficult. A list follows of the suc-

cessful projects that the Society has participated in from 1955'60.

Dr. Leslie L. Campbell started a practice that is very worthy—that of nominating persons as life members for memorial membership. of nominating persons as life members for memorial membership. These were awarded to the Misses Edmonia and Nettie Smith in memory of his wife Catherine Houston Campbell.

Mr. Lester Schnare, before his death prepared some six photograph

albums of Society pictures for their care and display purposes.

The Castle has been opened several days yearly to the public and for the children of the local schools, that they might observe the picture gallery, the artifacts and the library.

During special weeks as "Heritage" and "Garden" weeks the Society

has furnished exhibition materials.

Additional books, pamphlets, and manuscripts given to the Society

have been catalogued by professional cataloguers.

A dozen or so scholars have used the manuscript files available in the

library of the Castle.

Miss Ellen Anderson and Miss Mary Galt have answered countless inquiries as to local history and genealogy.

Miss Mary Galt has prepared several new Record of Will files from the

Court House for use in the Society.

With Mrs. Charles McCulloch chairman, essay contests have for several years been conducted in the local schools.

At least a dozen members of the Society have published books and ar-

ticles in learned magazines.

One of the very special efforts of the organization was the erection of a handsome marker near the birthplace of Archibald Alexander. This was presented under the able direction of Mr. Earl Paxton in the summer of 1958.

In 1959, the garden of the Castle was restored by the Rockbridge County Council of Garden Clubs. Mrs. Cole Davis gave the shrubs in memory

of her late husband to whom this volume is dedicated.

Miss Ellen Anderson is presently preparing a list of various art ob-

jects available in the county.

Finally, the Society is planning to help in the celebration of the Civil War Centennial with appropriate program, and the placing of a marker on the court house grounds in honor of the men who served from this county.

#### DONATIONS

Mr. Lester Schnare presented some original Miley color process plates which are additions to our Miley exhibition in the Castle gallery, given

to him by the Virginia Historical Society.

Three sets of valuable papers of Messrs. Houston, Harrington Waddell and Greenlee D. Letcher were given to the Society. The latter contains the valuable Civil War letters of four Davidson men who served from Lexington.

Miss Maude Houston presented the Society some family papers dating

back to the Revolution.

Mary Moore's cradle loaned along with some family heirlooms were

given by Miss Ellen Anderson.

A large medicine cabinet owned by Col. John Jordan was given us by Jean Cameron Agnew.

Two collections of books from the estates of Dr. Livingston Smith and

Reid White were added as gifts from their families.

Dr. Leslie L. Campbell continues to give his papers, books and pictures to us. Notably of this collection are framed color prints of the Miley photographs of Martha and George Washington.

Rare prints were gifts of Mrs. Marshall Wiltshire and Mrs. Gordon

Two volumes of "Reminiscences" of Randolph Tucker, Washington and Lee University graduate of 1902 and Col. William T. Poague, Treasurer of V.M.I., 1885-1914, were nice acquisitions.

A number of photographs and books have been added to the Castle

collections by the membership.

#### BY-LAWS

#### Article I — Membership

(a) Membership in this Society shall consist of persons interested in the purposes of the Society, and who shall be approved for membership as hereinafter provided.

(b) Any person may be proposed in writing for membership in this Society, and such proposal shall be submitted to a committee on mem-

bership for its approval.

(c) Membership shall be divided into the following classes:

1. Active members who shall be regularly approved and elected as herein provided, and who shall pay such admission fee and periodic dues as may be required by the Society.

2. Sustaining members, who shall be otherwise qualified as active members, but who indicate a desire to contribute dues provided for sustaining members to further the purposes of the Society be-

yond the interest of other active members.

3. Life members, who shall be otherwise qualified as active members of the Society, and who shall within thirty days after their election pay the dues prescribed for life members to be credited to them in lieu of any further admission fees or dues.

4. Honorary members, who may be elected from such persons as may appear to be entitled to this distinction from their connection with or interest in historical or literary pursuits, or who may indicate a disposition to contribute to the collections to promote the objects of this Society.

(d) If any active member shall fail to pay his subscription for two years, or any time refuse to pay the same, he shall forfeit all the rights and privileges of membership, and the executive committee shall

cause his name to be removed from the list of members.

Article II — Officers and Elections

(a) The officers of this Society shall be: a president, seven (7) vice-presidents, a recording secretary, a corresponding secretary, a treasurer, and a librarian. The foregoing officers shall be elected at the annual meeting of the Society, by those attending or voting at such

meeting.

(b) The president shall preside at all meetings of the Society, shall have power to appoint all standing and special committees, with the exeception of the nominating committee. At least three of the vice-presidents shall be residents of the County of Rockbridge, and at least one vice-president shall be a resident of the Town of Lexington, Virginia. The vice-president's shall, in order, as they are available for such purposes, discharge the duties of the president whenever the latter shall be absent or unable to act as such. The recording secretary shall keep an accurate record of the proceedings of the Society and of its committees, and shall keep an accurate list of membership of the

Society designated according to the classification thereof, with the addresses of such members. The corresponding secretary shall likewise keep a list of the names and addresses of members and of officers, and shall notify such members of the time and place of meetings, of elections, and of other proceedings of the Society, and shall furnish proper publicity to the press of matters of interest relative to its affairs. The treasurer shall receive all funds of the Society and disburse same at the direction of the executive committee, and shall submit a proper report and account of the transactions of that office at the annual meeting of the Society. The librarian shall receive and take proper care and custody of historical papers and records and information brought to the attention of the Society, shall obtain and collect material desirable to its purposes, and shall furnish records and information for publication or for the work of committees and shall perform such other duties as may be designated by the executive committee and which may further the purposes of the Society.

(c) The term of the foregoing officers shall be for two years or until a successor shall be elected, subject to the qualification that the president shall not be eligible to hold office for more than two successive terms. Members may be nominated from the floor for any office, following the report of the nominating committee, and the majority of votes cast at the annual meeting shall be sufficient for election. Vacancies occurring in any office between annual meetings shall be filled by the

executive committee.

Article III — Executive Committee

The Executive Committee shall be composed of the president, the secretaries, the treasurer and librarian, with such other members of the Society as may be appointed by the president to the number of not less than ten or more than fifteen. This committee shall meet at the call of the president not less than four times a year, and shall be empowered to discuss and transact current business of the Society in the interim between general meetings, to appoint the nominating committee, and to do all other acts necessary and incident to the proper transaction of the business of the Society not required to be performed at a general meeting.

Article IV — Committees

(a) The Nominating Committee shall consist of not less than three nor more than five members appointed by the executive committee not less than thirty days before the date of the annual meeting of the Society. No officers of the Society shall be members of this committee. It shall be the duty of this committee to submit, at the annual meeting of the Society, one or more names of suitable persons to be voted upon for each office to be filled by election at such meeting.

(b) The Membership Committee shall consist of not less than five

(b) The Membership Committee shall consist of not less than five nor more than ten members to be appointed by the president, with the advice and approval of the executive committee. It shall be the duty of this committee to receive and approve or disapprove all written proposals for membership, and submit their recommendations in writing to the president. The executive committee shall be empowered to admit persons approved by the membership committee to membership and to announce their election at the next general meeting of the Society.

(c) The Program Committee shall consist of not less than three nor more than five members of the Society, whose duty it shall be to arrange and present at meetings of the Society matters of general

interest.

(d) The Ways and Means Committee shall consist of the president the treasurer, and three other members of the Society, whose duty it shall be to supervise and arrange the financial affairs of the Society, the collection of dues, the investment of funds of the Society, an the raising of funds for special purposes or objects and all other matters relating to the financial welfare of the Society.

(e) The Committee on Historical Records shall consist of a General

Chairman, under whom shall serve three subcommittees, as follows: (1) Committee on Biography: (2) Committee on Genealogy: (3) Committee on Historical Landmarks and Appliances. These committees are to be designated by the president. Their duty shall be to assist the librarian in the collection and publication of biographical, genealogical and historical records.

Papers read before the Society constitute a part of the proceedings

of the Society, and may be printed as such.

(f) Chairmen of such committees shall be appointed by the president and shall remain in office until their successors have been duly appointed.

Article V — Dues

Dues of members shall be payable within thirty days of the date of the annual meeting, and notices shall be mailed by the treasurer to all members at such times as that officer may deem proper. Unless and until otherwise directed by the Society, no admission fee shall be required for membership, and annual dues shall be \$2.00 for each active member and \$10.00 for each sustaining member. As heretofore provided, life members shall pay an admission fee of \$50.00 in lieu of other dues. Memorial members shall not be required to pay dues, but shall have the privileges of contributing money or material to the Society in accordance with their interest.

Article VI — Meetings

There shall be four general meetings during each year, the first of which shall be an annual meeting for the purpose of transacting business of the Society, the remaining meetings to be devoted to a discussion of matters of interest to the Society, under the direction of the Program Committee. A quorum for the transaction of business at any annual meeting shall be fifteen members, and at committee meetings a majority of those required to act. A majority vote of members present or voting shall be sufficient to determine all matters submitted to the Society or any committee. Special meetings shall be had at the call of the president or of the executive committee; and meetings of committees shall be had at the call of the chairman or acting chairman of such committee.

Article VII — Order of Business

The order of business at any regular meeting shall be, as follows:

Reading of Minutes
 Reports of Officers

3. Reports of Standing Committees
4. Reports of Special Committees

5. Unfinished Business

Communications
 New Business

8. Program and General Discussion

The order of business at any meeting may be varied by the executive committee to carry out the proper purposes of such meeting.

Article VIII — Amendments

The articles of association heretofore approved shall be the Constitution of this Society, and such Constitution, as well as the By-Laws, or any of them, may be amended at any regular meeting of the Society by a two-thirds vote of those attending or voting, provided such proposed amendment has been submitted at the last previous meeting, and notice thereof conveyed to the members by mail or by publication in one of the local newspapers not less than ten days previous to the meeting at which the same is to be voted upon; save that previous

meeting at which the same is to be voted upon; save that previous notice shall not be required as to any amendment approved and recommended by the executive committee.

The above Constitution and By-Laws were adopted by the Rockbridge

Historical Society, in Lexington, Virginia, on August 9, 1939; and amended on April 4, 1944.